





Eight Volumes, crown 8vo, price 5s. each, sold separately.

A NEW AND UNIFORM EDITION OF

A DEVOTIONAL COMMENTARY ON THE GOSPEL NARRATIVE

BY THE

REV. ISAAC WILLIAMS, B.D.

FORMERLY FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

VOL. I. THOUGHTS on the STUDY of the HOLY GOSPELS

CHARACTERISTIC DIFFERENCES IN
THE FOUR GOSPELS.

OUR LORD'S MANIFESTATIONS OF
HIMSELF.

THE RULE OF SCRIPTURAL INTERPRE-
TATION FURNISHED BY OUR LORD.

ANALOGIES OF THE GOSPEL.

MENTION OF ANGELS IN THE GOSPELS.
PLACES OF OUR LORD'S ABODE AND
MINISTRY.

OUR LORD'S MODE OF DEALING WITH
HIS APOSTLES.

CONCLUSION.

INDEX OF TEXTS.

VOL. II. A HARMONY of the FOUR EVANGELISTS

THE BIRTH AT BETHLEHEM.

THE BAPTISM IN JORDAN.

THE FIRST PASSOVER.

THE SECOND PASSOVER.

CHRIST WITH THE TWELVE.

THE TWELVE SENT FORTH.

TEACHING IN GALILEE.

TEACHING AT JERUSALEM.

LAST JOURNEY FROM GALILEE TO
JERUSALEM.

THE APPROACH TO JERUSALEM.

THE TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE.

THE DISCOURSE ON THE MOUNT OF
OLIVES.

THE LAST SUPPER.

THE PASSION.

THE RESURRECTION.

VOL. III. OUR LORD'S NATIVITY

THE BIRTH AT BETHLEHEM.

THE BAPTISM IN JORDAN.

THE FIRST PASSOVER.

VOL. IV. OUR LORD'S MINISTRY. SECOND YEAR

**THE SECOND PASSOVER.
CHRIST WITH THE TWELVE.**

THE TWELVE SENT FORTH.

VOL. V. OUR LORD'S MINISTRY. THIRD YEAR

**TEACHING IN GALILEE.
TEACHING AT JERUSALEM.**

**LAST JOURNEY FROM GALILEE TO
JERUSALEM.**

VOL. VI. THE HOLY WEEK

**THE APPROACH TO JERUSALEM.
THE TEACHING IN THE TEMPLE.
THE DISCOURSE ON THE MOUNT OF
OLIVES.**

**THE LAST SUPPER.
INDEX OF TEXTS.**

VOL. VII. OUR LORD'S PASSION

**THE HOUR OF DARKNESS.
THE AGONY.
THE APPREHENSION.
THE CONDEMNATION.**

**THE DAY OF SORROWS.
THE HALL OF JUDGMENT.
THE CRUCIFIXION.
THE SEPULTURE.**

VOL. VIII. OUR LORD'S RESURRECTION

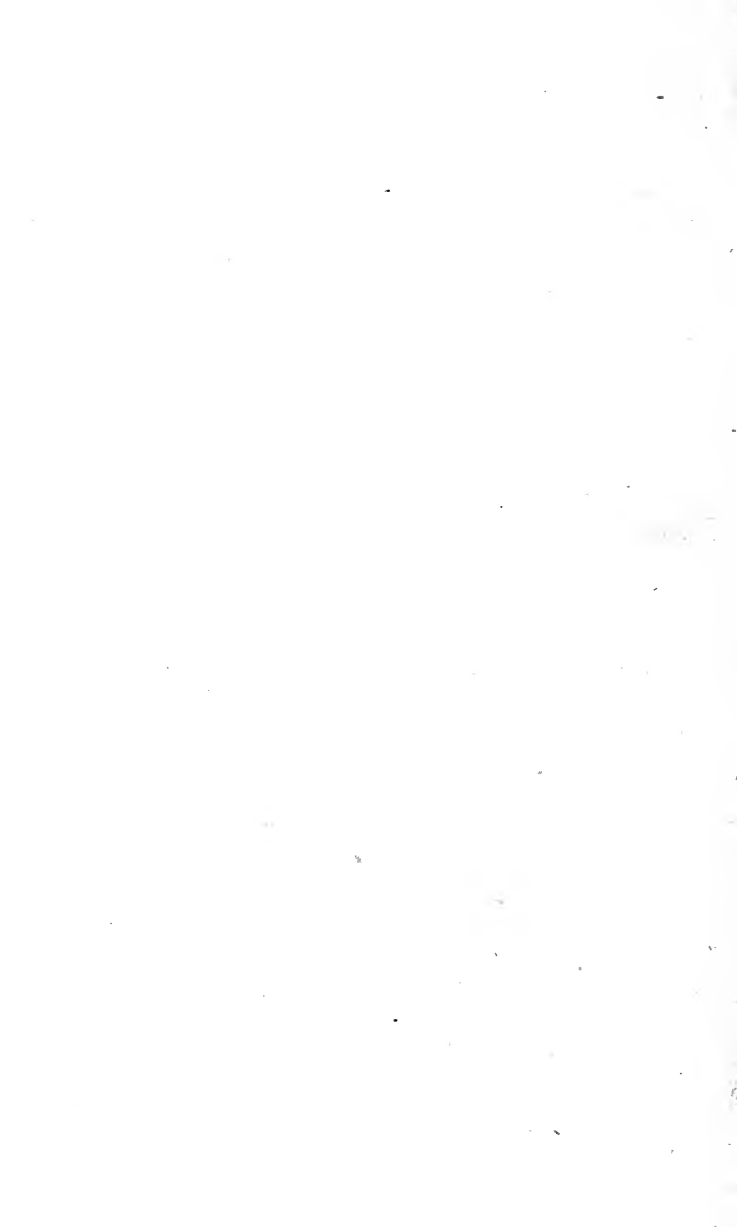
**THE DAY OF DAYS.
THE GRAVE VISITED.
CHRIST APPEARING.
THE GOING TO EMMAUS.
THE FORTY DAYS.**

**THE APOSTLES ASSEMBLED.
THE LAKE IN GALILEE.
THE MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE.
THE RETURN FROM GALILEE.**

Devotional Commentary on the Gospel Narrative

VOLUME II

A HARMONY OF THE FOUR
EVANGELISTS



Devotional Commentary on the Gospel Narrative.

A HARMONY OF THE FOUR
EVANGELISTS

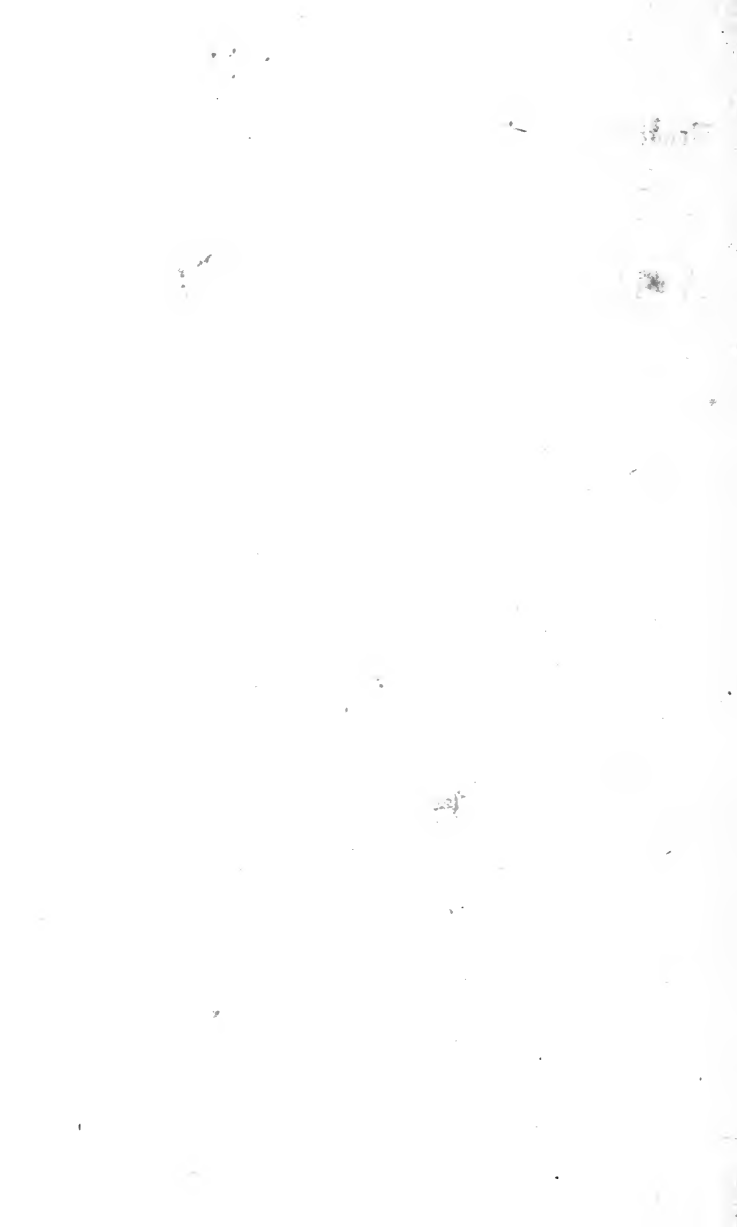
BY THE
REV. ISAAC WILLIAMS, B.D.

LATE FELLOW OF TRINITY COLLEGE, OXFORD

NEW EDITION

RIVINGTONS
WATERLOO PLACE, LONDON

MDCCCLXXXIV



CONTENTS

THE HARMONY BEING INTENDED AS A KEY OR COMPANION TO THE COMMENTARY, THE TITLES OF THE PARTS AND SECTIONS WILL BE FOUND THROUGHOUT TO CORRESPOND; EXCEPT IN THE TWO LAST VOLUMES OF THE SERIES.

PART I

The Birth at Bethlehem

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Preface of St. Luke	1
II. The Angel appearing to Zacharias	<i>ib.</i>
III. The Angel appearing unto St. Mary	3
IV. Mary visiting Elisabeth	4
V. The Birth of the Baptist	5
VI. The Angel appearing to Joseph.....	6
VII. The City of David.....	7
VIII. The Angels and the Shepherds	<i>ib.</i>
IX. The Circumcision	8
X. The Genealogies	9
XI. The Coming of the Magi.....	11
XII. The Presentation in the Temple	12
XIII. The Flight into Egypt.....	13
XIV. The Childhood of Christ	14

PART II

The Baptism in Jordan

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Eternal Generation of Christ	16
II. The Voice in the Wilderness	18
III. The Teaching of the Baptist	22
IV. The Approach of Christ foretold	24
V. Christ is baptized	ib.
VI. The Temptation	28
VII. The Testimony of John	31
VIII. Disciples brought to Christ.....	32
IX. The Marriage in Cana of Galilee	33

PART III

The First Passover

TO THE END OF THE FIRST YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

I. The Cleansing of the Temple	35
II. Nicodemus coming by Night	36
III. Christ in the land of Judea.....	37
IV. John cast into Prison	38
V. Jesus at the Well of Samaria.....	42
VI. The Nobleman from Capernaum	44
VII. The Jubilee announced at Nazareth	45
VIII. The Call of the Four Disciples	46
IX. The Demoniac healed	48
X. The Evening of the Sabbath	50
XI. The Mount of Beatitudes	52
XII. The Beatitudes	56
XIII. The Law and the Prophets fulfilled	ib.
XIV. Alms, Prayer, and Fasting.....	59
XV. Proverbial Precepts of the Gospel.....	61
XVI. The Miraculous Draught of Fishes	63

SECT.	PAGE
XVII. The Leper healed	64
XVIII. The Cure of the Paralytic ...	66
XIX. The Calling of St. Matthew	72

PART IV

The Second Passover

OR, THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

I. The Pool of Bethesda	74
II. The Charge of Breaking the Sabbath	75
III. Christ the Resurrection	ib.
IV. The Testimonies of Christ	76
V. Plucking the Ears of Corn on the Sabbath-day	78
VI. The Withered Hand healed on the Sabbath.....	80
VII. Christ retires toward the Sea.....	84
VIII. Election of the Twelve Apostles.....	86
IX. The Sermon on the Plain	90
X. Laws of Christian Love	ib.
XI. Laws of Self-conduct	91
XII. The Centurion's Servant.....	92
XIII. The Widow's Son at Nain	95
XIV. The Message from John in Prison.....	ib.
XV. The Baptist and Christ both rejected	98
XVI. The Sinner Anointing Christ's Feet	99
XVII. Circuit through Galilee	101

PART V

Christ with the Twelve

I. The Demoniac healed at Capernaum.....	102
II. The Pharisees seek a Sign	108

SECT.	PAGE
III. The Unclean Spirit returning	110
IV. Our Lord's Mother and Brethren come to Him	112
V. Christ dines with a Pharisee	114
VI. Disciples warned against Hypocrisy.....	116
VII. The Rich Man dying suddenly	117
VIII. Disciples exhorted to Heavenly mindedness	118
IX. The Church exhorted to watch	119
X. The Galileans slain by Pilate	121
XI. The Parables of the Sower, the Seed, and the Tares	122
XII. The Mustard Seed and the Leaven	126
XIII. Parable of the Sower explained.....	128
XIV. Parable of the Tares explained	136
XV. Parables of the Treasure, the Pearl, and the Net ...	137
XVI. Treatment of different Followers	138
XVII. The Tempest stilled on the Lake	140
XVIII. The Demoniacs among the Gadarenes	144
XIX. The Feast at the House of Levi.....	150
XX. The Raising of Jairus's Daughter	156
XXI. Two Blind Men healed, and a Dumb Spirit cast out	166
XXII. The Return to Nazareth	<i>ib.</i>

PART VI

The Twelve sent forth

I. Apostles instructed for their Mission	168
II. Further Instruction of Apostles	172
III. Herod hears of Christ	176
IV. Christ retires with the Twelve	180
V. The First Miracle of the Loaves.....	184
VI. Christ again retires to the Mountain.....	188
VII. Christ walks upon the Sea	190
VIII. People healed at Gennesaret	194
IX. Christ found at Capernaum	196
X. The Incarnation	197
XI. Murmuring of the Jews	198
XII. The Holy Eucharist.....	<i>ib.</i>
XIII. Disciples offended.....	199

PART VII

Teaching in Galilee

THE THIRD YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

SECT.	PAGE
I. The Third Passover	200
II. Eating with Unwashen Hands	<i>ib.</i>
III. What defileth the Man.....	203
IV. The Woman of Canaan	205
V. A Deaf and Stammering Man healed	207
VI. The Second Miracle of the Loaves	208
VII. The Pharisees again seek a Sign	209
VIII. The Leaven of Scripture interpreted	211
IX. The Blind Man at Bethsaida	213
X. The Great Confession of St. Peter.....	214
XI. The Passion foretold	216
XII. The Transfiguration.....	220
XIII. The Maniac Boy	226
XIV. The Passion again foretold.....	232
XV. The Sacred Didrachma	234
XVI. Which shall be the greatest	236
XVII. Forbid him not	238
XVIII. The Parable of Forgiveness	242

PART VIII

Teaching at Jerusalem

I. Christ urged to manifest Himself	245
II. Christ at the Feast of Tabernacles	246
III. The Last Day of the Feast	247
IV. The Woman taken in Adultery	248
V. The Light of the World will leave the Jews	249
VI. The True Children of Abraham	250
VII. The Man Blind from his Birth	252
VIII. The Sheep-fold and Good Shepherd	254

SECT.	PAGE
IX. The Feast of Dedication	256
X. The Sisters Martha and Mary	257
XI. The Sickness of Lazarus	<i>ib.</i>
XII. The Raising of Lazarus	258
XIII. Effect of the Miracle	260

PART IX

Last Journey from Galilee to Jerusalem

I., II. The Seventy sent forth	262
III. The Seventy return	263
IV. The Parable of the Good Samaritan	264
V. The Disciples taught to Pray	265
VI. The Woman bowed down with Infirmary	266
VII. Are there few that be saved?	267
VIII. The Dropsy healed on the Sabbath	268
IX. The Parables at the Feast	<i>ib.</i>
X. The Great Supper	269
XI. All must be renounced for Christ	270
XII. The Lost Sheep and the Lost Piece of Money	271
XIII. The Prodigal Son	272
XIV. The Unjust Steward	273
XV. The Rich Man and Lazarus	274
XVI. Disciples warned of Offences	276
XVII. The Zeal of James and John reproved	<i>ib.</i>
XVIII. The Ten Lepers	277
XIX. On the Coming of the Kingdom	278
XX. The Importunate Widow	279
XXI. The Pharisee and the Publican	<i>ib.</i>
XXII. Divorce and Chastity	280
XXIII. Little Children brought to Christ	282
XXIV. The Rich Young Ruler	284
XXV. The Labourers in the Vineyard	290
XXVI. The Passion again foretold	292
XXVII. The Request of James and John	294

SECT.	PAGE
XXVIII. The Blind Men at Jericho	296
XXIX. The House of Zaccheus	300
XXX. Parable of the Pounds.....	302

PART X

The Approach to Jerusalem

I. State of Feeling in the City	304
II. The Supper at Bethany	<i>ib.</i>
III. The Remark of Judas	306
IV. The Morning of Palm Sunday	308
V. The Procession from Bethany on Palm Sunday	310
VI. The Descent of the Mount of Olives	314
VII. Christ weeping over Jerusalem	316
VIII. Christ entering Jerusalem	318
IX. The Greeks brought to Christ	319
X. Unbelief of the Jews	320
XI. The Cursing of the Fig Tree	321
XII. The Buyers and Sellers in the Temple	322
XIII. The Return to the Temple	324

PART XI

The Teaching in the Temple

I. The Question of Authority	326
II. The Parable of the Two Sons	328
III. The Parable of the Vineyard	330
IV. The Stone rejected of the Builders	334
V. Parable of the Marriage Feast	336
VI. The Question of Tribute	338
VII. The Question of the Sadducees	340
VIII. The First and Great Commandment	346
IX. Our Lord's Question of the Son of David	348

SECT.	PAGE
X. Caution against the Pharisees	350
XI. The Woes denounced in the Temple	352
XII. The Widow at the Treasury	357

PART XII

The Discourse on the Mount of Olives

I. Inquiry of the Disciples	358
II. The Beginning of Sorrows	360
III. Suffering of Disciples	362
IV. The Days of Antichrist	366
V. The Son of Man Coming	370
VI. The Warnings	372
VII. Parable of the Ten Virgins	378
VIII. Parable of the Talents.....	379
IX. The Son of Man on the Throne of His Glory	380

PART XIII

The Last Supper

I. The Betrayal	382
II. Preparation for the Passover	384
III. The Cup of the Old Testament	388
IV. Washing the Disciples' Feet	390
V., VI. Judas Present	ib.
VII. St. Peter warned	396
VIII. The Bread	398
IX. Christ Consoling His Disciples	400
X. The Cup of the New Testament.....	402
XI. The True Vine	ib.
XII. Promise of the Comforter	405
XIII. The Great Intercession	407
XIV. The Going Forth	408

PART XIV

The Passion

SECT.	PAGE
I. Our Lord's Agony in the Garden	412
II. Christ betrayed and apprehended	416
III. The Denials of St. Peter	424
IV. Christ is condemned before Caiaphas	430
V. Our Lord delivered up to Pilate	436
VI. Christ sent to Herod	438
VII. Christ rejected of the People	440
VIII. Christ delivered up to be Crucified	444
IX. The Remorse of Judas	450
X. The Way of Sorrows	<i>ib.</i>
XI. The Crucifixion	454
XII. The Death of Christ	462
XIII. The Evening of the Crucifixion	468

PART XV

The Resurrection

I. The Great Sabbath	474
II. The End of the Sabbath	<i>ib.</i>
III. An Angel speaks to the Women	476
IV. The Guard proceed to the Chief Priests	477
V. Mary Magdalene calls St. Peter and St. John	<i>ib.</i>
VI. Our Lord appears to Mary Magdalene	478
VII. Our Lord seen by the Women	480
VIII. The Women in St. Luke's account	<i>ib.</i>
IX. The Disciples going to Emmaus	481
X. Their Return to Jerusalem	482
XI. Our Lord appears to the Apostles in the absence of St. Thomas	483
XII. Second appearance to the Apostles, Thomas being present	484

SECT.	PAGE
XIII. Christ appears by the Lake in Galilee	486
XIV. Our Lord appears on the Mountain in Galilee	488
XV. Various Manifestations	489
XVI. Christ appears to the Apostles at Jerusalem	490
XVII. The Ascension	490
XVIII. Conclusion of St. John's Gospel	492

PART I

The Birth at Bethlehem

SECTION I

THE PREFACE OF ST. LUKE *

Luke i. 1—4.

FORASMUCH as many ³it seemed good to me also, have taken in hand to having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilus, ⁴that thou mightest know the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been instructed; and ministers of the word;

SECTION II

THE ANGEL APPEARING TO ZACHARIAS

Luke i. 5—25.

⁵There was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia: and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Elisabeth. ⁶And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of

* See Nativity, p. 8.

Luke i. 5—25.

the Lord blameless. ⁷And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in years.

⁸And it came to pass, that while he executed the priest's office before God in the order of his course, ⁹according to the custom of the priest's office, his lot was to burn incense when he went into the temple of the Lord. ¹⁰And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense.

¹¹And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense. ¹²And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear fell upon him. ¹³But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy prayer is heard; and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. ¹⁴And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. ¹⁵For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and shall drink neither wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother's womb.

¹⁶And many of the children of Israel shall he turn to the Lord their God. ¹⁷And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just; to make ready a people prepared for the Lord.

¹⁸And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. ¹⁹And the angel answering, said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. ²⁰And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

²¹And the people waited for Zacharias, and marvelled that he tarried so long in the temple. ²²And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: for he beckoned unto them, and remained speechless. ²³And it came to pass,

Luke i. 5—25.

that, as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house.

²⁴And after those days his wife Elisabeth conceived, and

hid herself five months, saying, ²⁵Thus hath the Lord dealt with me, in the days wherein he looked on *me*, to take away my reproach among men.

SECTION III

THE ANGEL APPEARING UNTO ST. MARY

Luke i. 26—38.

²⁶And in the sixth month * the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, ²⁷to a virgin espoused to a man, whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name *was* Mary. ²³And the angel came in unto her, and said, Hail, *thou that art* highly favoured, the Lord *is* with thee: blessed *art* thou among women. ²⁹And when she saw *him*, she was troubled at his saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this should be.

³⁰And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God. ³¹And, behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his

name JESUS. ³²He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: ³³and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. ³⁴Then said Mary unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? ³⁵And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God. ³⁶And, behold, thy cousin Elisabeth, she hath also conceived a son in her old age:

* See Nativity, pp. 30, 31.

Luke i. 26—38.

and this is the sixth month with her who was called barren. ³⁷For with God nothing shall be impossible. ³⁸And Mary said, Behold the hand-

maid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word.

And the angel departed from her.

SECTION IV

MARY VISITING ELISABETH

Luke i. 39—56.

³⁹And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-country with haste, into a city of Juda; ⁴⁰and entered into the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elisabeth.

⁴¹And it came to pass that when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb: and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost. ⁴²And she spake out with a loud voice, and said, Blessed *art* thou among women, and blessed *is* the fruit of thy womb. ⁴³And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come to me? ⁴⁴For, lo, as soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. ⁴⁵And blessed *is* she that believed: for there shall be a performance of those

things which were told her from the Lord.

⁴⁶And Mary said, My soul doth magnify the Lord, ⁴⁷and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour. ⁴⁸For he hath regarded the low estate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed. ⁴⁹For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy *is* his name. ⁵⁰And his mercy *is* on them that fear him, from generation to generation. ⁵¹He hath shewed strength with his arm: he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts. ⁵²He hath put down the mighty from *their* seats, and exalted them of low degree. ⁵³He hath filled the hungry with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away. ⁵⁴He

Luke i. 39—56.

hath holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of his mercy; ⁵⁵as he spake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to

his seed for ever.

⁵⁶And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.

SECTION V

THE BIRTH OF THE BAPTIST

Luke i. 57—80.

⁵⁷Now Elisabeth's full time came, that she should be delivered: and she brought forth a son. ⁵⁸And her neighbours and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

⁵⁹And it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circumcise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

⁶⁰And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. ⁶¹And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. ⁶²And they made signs to his father how he would have him called. ⁶³And he asked for a writing table, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. ⁶⁴And his mouth was opened immediately, and

his tongue loosed, and he spake and praised God. ⁶⁵And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-country of Judea. ⁶⁶And all they that had heard them, laid them up in their hearts, saying, What manner of child shall this be! And the hand of the Lord was with him.

⁶⁷And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, ⁶⁸Blessed be the Lord God of Israel; for he hath visited and redeemed his people. ⁶⁹And hath raised up an horn of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David; ⁷⁰as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which have been since the world began: ⁷¹that we should be saved from our enemies,

Luke i. 57—80.

and from the hand of all that hate us; ⁷²to perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant: ⁷³the oath which he sware to our father Abraham, ⁷⁴That he would grant unto us, that we being delivered out of the hands of our enemies, might serve him without fear, ⁷⁵in holiness and righteousness before him, all the days of our life. ⁷⁶And thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest: for thou shalt go before the face

of the Lord, to prepare his ways: ⁷⁷to give knowledge of salvation unto his people, by the remission of their sins, ⁷⁸through the tender mercy of our God; whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, ⁷⁹to give light to them that sit in darkness, and *in* the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace.

⁸⁰And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the desert till the day of his shewing unto Israel*.

SECTION VI

*THE ANGEL APPEARING TO JOSEPH**Matt. i. 18—25.*

¹⁸Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. ¹⁹Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. ²⁰But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord

appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. ²¹And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins. ²²Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet,

* See Nativity, pp. 67, 68.

Matt. i. 18—25.

saying, ²³ Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.

²⁴ Then Joseph, being raised

from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him, and took unto him his wife. ²⁵ And knew her not till she had brought forth her first-born son. And he called his name Jesus*.

SECTION VII

THE CITY OF DAVID

Luke ii. 1—7.

¹ And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. ² And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria. ³ And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. ⁴ And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem; (because

he was of the house and lineage of David,) ⁵ to be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. ⁶ And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. ⁷ And she brought forth her first-born son, and wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger; because there was no room for them in the inn†.

SECTION VIII

THE ANGELS AND THE SHEPHERDS

Luke ii. 8—20.

⁸ And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the fields, keeping watch over their flock by night. ⁹ And,

* See Nativity, p. 77. † See Study of Gospels, pp. 317, 318.

Luke ii. 8—20.

10, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. ¹⁰And the angel said unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people. ¹¹For unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. ¹²And this *shall be* a sign unto you; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling-clothes, lying in a manger. ¹³And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying, ¹⁴Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

¹⁵And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the

shepherds said one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. ¹⁶And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a manger. ¹⁷And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child. ¹⁸And all they that heard *it* wondered at those things which were told them by the shepherds. ¹⁹But Mary kept all these things, and pondered *them* in her heart. ²⁰And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them*.

SECTION IX

THE CIRCUMCISION

Luke ii. 21.

²¹And when eight days were accomplished for the circumcising of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

* See Nativity, p. 94.

SECTION X

THE GENEALOGIES*

Matt. i. 1—17.

¹The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

²Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren; ³and Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Esrom; and Esrom begat Aram; ⁴and Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naasson; and Naasson begat Salmon; ⁵and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse; ⁶and Jesse begat David the king;

And David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias; ⁷and Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Asa; ⁸and Asa begat Josaphat; and Josaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias; ⁹and Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias; ¹⁰and Ezekias begat Manasses;

Luke iii. 23—38.

²³And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was *the son* of Heli, ²⁴which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Janna, which was *the son* of Joseph, ²⁵which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Amos, which was *the son* of Naum, which was *the son* of Esli, which was *the son* of Nagge, ²⁶which was *the son* of Maath, which was *the son* of Mattathias, which was *the son* of Semei, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Juda, ²⁷which was *the son* of Joanna, which was *the son* of Rhesa, which was *the son* of Zorobabel, which was *the son* of Salathiel, which was *the son* of Neri,

²⁸Which was *the son* of Melchi, which was *the son* of Addi, which was *the son* of Cosam, which was *the son* of Elmodam, which was *the son*

* See Nativity, pp. 104—122.

Matt. i. 1—17.

and Manasses begat Amon; and Amon begat Josias; ¹¹and Josias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon;

¹²And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel; ¹³and Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor; ¹⁴and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud; ¹⁵and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob; ¹⁶and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born JESUS, who is called Christ.

¹⁷So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon *are* fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

Luke iii. 23—38.

of Er, ²⁹ which was *the son* of Jose, which was *the son* of Eliezer, which was *the son* of Jorim, which was *the son* of Matthat, which was *the son* of Levi, ³⁰ which was *the son* of Simeon, which was *the son* of Juda, which was *the son* of Joseph, which was *the son* of Jonan, which was *the son* of Eliakim, ³¹ which was *the son* of Melea, which was *the son* of Menan, which was *the son* of Mattatha, which was *the son* of Nathan, which was *the son* of David,

³² Which was *the son* of Jesse, which was *the son* of Obed, which was *the son* of Booz, which was *the son* of Salmon, which was *the son* of Naasson, ³³ which was *the son* of Aminadab, which was *the son* of Aram, which was *the son* of Esrom, which was *the son* of Phares, which was *the son* of Juda, ³⁴ which was *the son* of Jacob, which was *the son* of Isaac, which was *the son* of Abraham, which was *the son* of Thara, which was *the son* of Nachor,

³⁵ Which was *the son* of Saruch, which was *the son* of Ragau, which was *the son* of Phalec, which was *the son* of Heber, which was *the son* of

Luke iii. 23—38.

Sala, ³⁶ which was *the son of Cainan*, which was *the son of Arphaxad*, which was *the son of Sem*, which was *the son of Noe*, which was *the son of Lamech*, ³⁷ which was *the son of Mathusala*, which was *the son of Enoch*, which was *the son of Jared*, which was *the son of Maleleel*, which was *the son of Cainan*, ³⁸ which was *the son of Enos*, which was *the son of Seth*, which was *the son of Adam*, which was *the son of God*.

SECTION XI

THE COMING OF THE MAGI*

Matt. ii. 1—12.

¹ Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

² When Herod the king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. ⁴ And when he had

gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born? ⁵ And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judea: for thus it is written by the prophet, ⁶ And thou, Bethlehem, *in the land of Juda*, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor that shall rule my people Israel. ⁷ Then Herod, when he had privily called

* See Nativity, pp. 122—124.

Matt. ii. 1—12.

the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. ⁸ And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child: and when ye have found *him*, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also.

⁹ When they had heard the king, they departed; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. ¹⁰ When they saw the star, they rejoiced

with exceeding great joy. ¹¹ And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh. ¹² And being warned of God in a dream, that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

SECTION XII

*THE PRESENTATION IN THE TEMPLE**Luke ii. 22—39.*

²² And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moses, were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord. ²³ (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord.) ²⁴ And to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.

²⁵ And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Ghost was upon him. ²⁶ And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. ²⁷ And he came by the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him

Luke ii. 22—39.

after the custom of the law,
²⁸ then took he him up in his
 arms, and blessed God, and
 said, ²⁹ Lord, now lettest thou
 thy servant depart in peace,
 according to thy word: ³⁰ for
 mine eyes have seen thy sal-
 vation, ³¹ which thou hast
 prepared before the face of all
 people; ³² a light to lighten
 the Gentiles, and the glory of
 thy people Israel. ³³ And
 Joseph and his mother mar-
 velled at those things which
 were spoken of him. ³⁴ And
 Simeon blessed them, and said
 unto Mary his mother, Behold,
 this *Child* is set for the fall and
 rising again of many in Israel;
 and for a sign which shall be
 spoken against; ³⁵ (yea, a
 sword shall pierce through
 thy own soul also,) that the

thoughts of many hearts may
 be revealed.

³⁶ And there was one Anna
 a prophetess, the daughter of
 Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser:
 she was of a great age, and had
 lived with an husband seven
 years from her virginity:
³⁷ and she *was* a widow of
 about fourscore and four years,
 which departed not from the
 temple, but served *God* with
 fastings and prayers night and
 day. ³⁸ And she coming in
 that instant, gave thanks like-
 wise unto the Lord, and spake
 of him to all them that looked
 for redemption in Jerusalem.
³⁹ And when they had per-
 formed all things according to
 the law of the Lord, they re-
 turned into Galilee, to their
 own city Nazareth*.

SECTION XIII

*THE FLIGHT INTO EGYPT**Matt. ii. 13—23.*

¹³ And when they were de-
 parted, behold, the angel of the
 Lord appeareth to Joseph in a
 dream, saying, Arise, and take
 the young child, and his mo-
 ther, and flee into Egypt, and

be thou there until I bring thee
 word: for Herod will seek the
 young child to destroy him.

¹⁴ When he arose, he took the
 young child and his mother
 by night, and departed into

* See Nativity, pp. 154, 155.

Matt. ii. 13—23.

Egypt: ¹⁵and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son.

¹⁶Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently enquired of the wise men. ¹⁷Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, ¹⁸In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping *for* her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not*.

¹⁹But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, ²⁰saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead which sought the young child's life. ²¹And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. ²²But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea, in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee†. ²³And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

SECTION XIV

THE CHILDHOOD OF CHRIST

Luke ii. 40—52.

⁴⁰And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, filled with wisdom; and the grace of God was upon him.

* See Nativity, p. 161.

⁴¹Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the feast of the passover. ⁴²And when he was twelve years old,

† See Study of Gospels, p. 319.

Luke ii. 40—52.

they went up to Jerusalem, after the custom of the feast.

⁴³And when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and Joseph and his mother knew not *of it*.

⁴⁴But they supposing him to have been in the company, went a day's journey; and they sought him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance.

⁴⁵And when they found him not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking him.

⁴⁶And it came to pass, that after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions. ⁴⁷And all that heard him, were astonished at his understand-

ing and answers. ⁴⁸And when they saw him, they were amazed: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. ⁴⁹And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business? ⁵⁰And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

⁵¹And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth, and was subject unto them: but his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. ⁵²And Jesus increased in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and man.

PART II

The Baptism in Jordan

SECTION I

THE ETERNAL GENERATION OF CHRIST

John i. 1—18.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. ²The same was in the beginning with God. ³All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. ⁴In him was life; and the life was the light of men. ⁵And light shineth in darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not.

⁶There was a man sent from God, whose name *was* John. ⁷The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men* through him might believe. ⁸He was not that Light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light. ⁹*That* was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh into the world. ¹⁰He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. ¹¹He came unto his own, and his own received him not. ¹²But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name: ¹³which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God. ¹⁴And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, and we beheld his glory, the

John i. 1—18.

glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

¹⁵ John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me: for he was before me. ¹⁶And of his fulness

have all we received, and grace for grace. ¹⁷For the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

¹⁸No man hath seen God at any time: the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

SECTION II

*Matt. iii. 1—6.**Mark i. 1—6.*

The beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God. ²As it is written in the prophets; Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

In those days,

came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea,

⁴ John did baptize in the wilderness

²And saying, Repent ye, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

and preach the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins.

³For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying,

²*As it is written in the Prophets;*

THE VOICE IN THE WILDERNESS

Luke iii. 1—6.

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea, and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

²Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John, the son of Zacharias, in the wilderness.

³And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the remission of sins;

⁴As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying,

Matt. iii. 1—6.

The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

⁴And this same John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.

⁵Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea,

and all the region round about Jordan,

⁶And were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins.

Mark i. 1—6.

³The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

⁶And John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey.

⁵And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem,

and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

Luke iii. 1—6.

The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

⁵ Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low : and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways *shall be* made smooth ;

⁶ And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

SECTION III

Matt. iii. 7—10.

⁷ But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them,

O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

⁸ Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance;

⁹ And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

¹⁰ And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Luke iii. 7—18.

⁷ Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him,

O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

⁸ Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance,

and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

⁹ And now also the ax is laid unto the root of the trees; every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

¹⁰ And the people asked him, saying, What shall we do then?

¹¹ He answereth and saith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewise.

¹² Then came also publicans to be baptized, and said unto him, Master, what shall we do?

¹³ And he said unto them, Exact no more than that which

THE TEACHING OF THE BAPTIST

Luke iii. 7—18.

is appointed you.

¹⁴And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages.

¹⁸And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people*.

* See Nativity, p. 220.

SECTION IV

*Matt. iii. 11, 12.**Mark i. 7, 8.*

¹¹ I indeed baptize
you with water unto repent-
ance; but he that cometh
after me is mightier than I,

whose shoes I am not worthy
to bear: he shall
baptize you with the Holy
Ghost,
and *with* fire.

¹² Whose fan *is* in his hand,
and he will thoroughly purge
his floor, and gather his wheat
into the garner; but he will
burn up the chaff with un-
quenchable fire.

⁷ And preached, saying,

⁸ I indeed have baptized
you with water;

there cometh one mightier
than I after me, the latchet of
whose shoes I am not worthy
to stoop down and unloose: he
shall baptize you with the
Holy Ghost.

SECTION V

*Matt. iii. 13—17.**Mark i. 9—11.*

⁹ And

¹³ Then cometh Jesus
from Galilee

it came to pass
in those days, that Jesus came
from Nazareth of Galilee,

THE APPROACH OF CHRIST FORETOLD

Luke iii. 15—17.

¹⁵And as the people were in expectation, and all men mused in their hearts of John, whether he were the Christ or not;

¹⁶John answered, saying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water;

but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire.

¹⁷Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

CHRIST IS BAPTIZED

Luke iii. 21—23.

²¹Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass that Jesus

Matt. iii. 13—17.

to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.

¹⁴ But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me?

¹⁵ And Jesus answering, said unto him, Suffer *it to be so* now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him.

¹⁶ And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water:

and

lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him.

¹⁷ And lo, a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Mark i. 9—11.

and was baptized of John in Jordan.

¹⁰ And straightway coming up out of the water,

he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending

upon him.

¹¹ And there came a voice from heaven, *saying*, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

Luke iii. 21—23.

also being baptized

and praying,
the heaven was opened.

²²And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven which said, Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well pleased.

²³And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age*.

* See Nativity, p. 230.

SECTION VI

*Matt. iv. 1—11.**Mark i. 12, 13.*

¹Then was Jesus led up of the spirit into the wilderness,

¹²And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

³And he was there in the wilderness

to be tempted of the devil.

forty
days, tempted of Satan:
and was with the wild beasts;

²And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights,

he was afterward an hungered.

³And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.

⁴But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

⁵¶ Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple*;

⁶And saith unto him, If

* See Nativity, pp. 252, 253.

THE TEMPTATION

Luke iv. 1—13.

¹And Jesus being full of
the Holy Ghost returned
from Jordan,
and was led by the spirit
into the wilderness,

²Being
forty
days tempted of the devil.

And in those days he did
eat nothing:
and when they were ended,
he afterward hungered.

³And the devil said unto
him, If thou be the Son
of God, command this stone
that it be made bread.

⁴And Jesus answered him,
saying, It is written, That man
shall not live by bread alone,
but by every word
of God.

⁵And he brought him to
Jerusalem,
and set him on a pinnacle
of the temple;
and said unto him, If thou

Matt. iv. 1—11.

thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down :

for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee :

and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

⁷Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

⁸Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them ;

⁹And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee,

if thou wilt fall down and worship me.

¹⁰Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan ; for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

¹¹Then the devil

Luke iv. 1—13.

be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence ;

¹⁰For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee : to keep thee.

¹¹And in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.

¹²And Jesus answering, said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

⁵And the devil taking him up into an high mountain, showed unto him all the kingdoms of the world,

in a moment.

⁶And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them : for that is delivered unto me, and to whomsoever I will I give it.

⁷If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine.

⁸And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan : for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

¹³And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he

Matt. iv. 1—11.

leaveth him.

Luke iv. 1—13.

departed from him
for a season*.

Matt. iv. 11.

And behold, angels came
and ministered unto him.

Mark i. 13.

And the angels ministered
unto him.

SECTION VII

THE TESTIMONY OF JOHN

John i. 19—34.

¹⁹And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him, Who art thou? ²⁰And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ. ²¹And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No†. ²²Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us: what sayest thou of thyself? ²³He said, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias. ²⁴And they which were sent were of the Pharisees. ²⁵And they asked

him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet? ²⁶John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not; ²⁷he it is, who coming after me, is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose. ²⁸These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

²⁹The next day John seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world. ³⁰This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is pre-

* See Nativity, pp. 263, 264.

† See Nativity, pp. 266, 267.

John i. 19—34.

ferred before me: for he was before me. ³¹And I knew him not: but that he should be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing with water. ³²And John bare record, saying, I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon him. ³³And I

knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, the same said unto me, Upon whom thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and remaining on him, the same is he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. ³⁴And I saw, and bare record, that this is the Son of God.

SECTION VIII

DISCIPLES BROUGHT TO CHRIST

John i. 35—51.

³⁵Again the next day after John stood, and two of his disciples; ³⁶and looking upon Jesus, as he walked, he saith, Behold the Lamb of God! ³⁷And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. ³⁸Then Jesus turned, and saw them following, and saith unto them, What seek ye? They said unto him, Rabbi, (which is to say, being interpreted, Master,) where dwellest thou? ³⁹He saith unto them, Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt, and abode with him that day: for it was about the tenth hour.

⁴⁰One of the two which

heard John *speak*, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. ⁴¹He first findeth his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. ⁴²And he brought him to Jesus. And when Jesus beheld him, he said, Thou art Simon the Son of Jona; thou shalt be called Cephas, which is by interpretation, A stone.

⁴³The day following, Jesus would go forth into Galilee, and findeth Philip, and saith unto him, Follow me. ⁴⁴Now Philip was of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter.

John i. 35—51.

⁴⁵ Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. ⁴⁶And Nathanael said unto him, Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come, and see. ⁴⁷Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! ⁴⁸Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast

under the fig-tree, I saw thee.

⁴⁹Nathanael answered and said unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Israel. ⁵⁰Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. ⁵¹And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

SECTION IX

*THE MARRIAGE IN CANA OF GALILEE**John ii. 1—12.*

¹And the third day* there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: ²and both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. ³And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. ⁴Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with

thee? mine hour is not yet come. ⁵His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do *it*. ⁶And there were set there six water-pots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. ⁷Jesus saith unto them, Fill the water-pots with water. And

* See Nativity, pp. 293, 294.

John ii. 1—12.

they filled them up to the brim. ⁸ And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare *it*.

⁹ When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, ¹⁰ and saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and

when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now. ¹¹ This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

¹² After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and they continued there not many days.

PART III

First Passover

TO THE END OF THE FIRST YEAR OF OUR LORD'S
MINISTRY

SECTION I

THE CLEANSING OF THE TEMPLE

John ii. 13—25.

AND the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem, ¹⁴ and found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money sitting. ¹⁵ And when he had made a scourge of small cords; he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables: ¹⁶ and said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise. ¹⁷ And his disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up.

¹⁸ Then answered the Jews and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? ¹⁹ Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. ²⁰ Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? ²¹ But he spake of the temple of his body. ²² When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this unto them; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

²³ Now when he was in Je-

John ii. 13—25.

rusalem at the passover, in the feast *day*, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did.

²⁴ But Jesus did not commit

himself unto them, because he knew all *men*, ²⁵ and needed not that any should testify of man; for he knew what was in man.

SECTION II

NICODEMUS COMING BY NIGHT

John iii. 1—21.

¹ There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews. ² The same came to Jesus by night, and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that thou doest, except God be with him. ³ Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. ⁴ Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? ⁵ Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. ⁶ That which

is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. ⁷ Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. ⁸ The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit. ⁹ Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? ¹⁰ Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things? ¹¹ Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. ¹² If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell

John iii. 1—21.

you *of* heavenly things?

¹³ And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man which is in heaven. ¹⁴ And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, *even* so must the Son of man be lifted up: ¹⁵ that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have eternal life. ¹⁶ For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. ¹⁷ For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved.

¹⁸ He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. ¹⁹ And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. ²⁰ For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reprov'd. ²¹ But he that doeth truth, cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.

SECTION III

*CHRIST IN THE LAND OF JUDEA ***John iii. 22—36.*

²² After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judea; and there he tarried with them †, and baptized. ²³ And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there was

much water there: and they came, and were baptized. ²⁴ For John was not yet cast into prison.

²⁵ Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disciples and the Jews about

* See Study of Gospels, pp. 323—326.

† See Nativity, pp. 337—347.

John iii. 22—36.

purifying. ²⁶ And they came unto John, and said unto him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold the same baptizeth, and all *men* come to him. ²⁷ John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven. ²⁸ Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. ²⁹ He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice; this my joy therefore is fulfilled. ³⁰ He must increase, but I *must* decrease. ³¹ He that cometh

from above is above all: he that is of the earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth: he that cometh from heaven is above all. ³² And what he hath-seen and heard, that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony. ³³ He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that God is true. ³⁴ For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for God giveth not the Spirit by measure *unto him*. ³⁵ The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand. ³⁶ He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.

SECTION IV

*Matt. iv. 12.**Mark i. 14.*

¹² ¶ Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into

¹⁴ Now after that John was put in

*JOHN CAST INTO PRISON***John* iv. 1—3.

¹When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, ²(though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,)

* See *Nativity*, pp. 347—350.

Matt. iv. 12.

prison,

he departed into

Galilee.

Matt. xiv. 3—5.

³ For Herod

had laid hold on

John, and bound him, and put
him in a prison, for

Herodias' sake, his brother
Philip's wife.

⁴ For John said unto him,
It is not lawful for thee to
have her.

⁵ And when he would have
put him to death, he feared
the multitude, because they
counted him as a prophet.

Mark i. 14.

prison,

Jesus came into

Galilee.

Mark vi. 17—20.

¹⁷ For Herod himself

had sent forth and

laid hold upon

John, and bound
him in prison for

Herodias' sake, his brother
Philip's wife;
for he had married her.

¹⁸ For John had said unto
Herod, It is not lawful for thee
to have thy brother's wife.

¹⁹ Therefore Herodias had a
quarrel against him, and would
have killed him; but she could
not.

²⁰ For Herod feared John,
knowing that he was a just
man and an holy, and ob-
served him; and when he
heard him, he did many things,
and heard him gladly.

Luke iv. 14.

¹⁴ ¶ And
Jesus returned
in the power of the spirit into
Galilee.

Luke iii. 19, 20.

¹⁹ But Herod the tetrarch,—

²⁰ added yet this above all,

that he shut up John in
prison,—

¹⁹ being reprov'd by him for
Herodias his brother
Philip's wife,

and for all the evils which
Herod had done.

John iv. 1—3.

³ He left Judea, and
departed again into
Galilee.

SECTION V

JESUS AT THE WELL OF SAMARIA

John iv. 4—42.

⁴And he must needs go through Samaria. ⁵Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. ⁶Now Jacob's well was there, Jesus therefore being wearied with *his* journey, sat thus on the well: *and* it was about the sixth hour.

⁷There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water. Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. ⁸For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat. ⁹Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. ¹⁰Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. ¹¹The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and

the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? ¹²Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? ¹³Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: ¹⁴but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him, shall never thirst: but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. ¹⁵The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. ¹⁶Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. ¹⁷The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: ¹⁸for thou hast had five husbands, and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly. ¹⁹The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a pro-

John iv. 4—42.

phet. ²⁰ Our fathers worshipped in this mountain: and ye say, That in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. ²¹ Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. ²² Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. ²³ But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. ²⁴ God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship *him* in spirit and in truth. ²⁵ The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ, when he is come, he will tell us all things. ²⁶ Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am *he*.

²⁷ And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her? ²⁸ The woman then left her water-pot, and went her way into the city, and

saith to the men, ²⁹ Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: Is not this the Christ? ³⁰ Then they went out of the city, and came unto him.

³¹ In the mean while his disciples prayed him, saying, Master, eat. ³² But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not of. ³³ Therefore said the disciples one to another, Hath any man brought him *ought* to eat? ³⁴ Jesus said unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to finish his work. ³⁵ Say not ye, There are yet four months, and *then* cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields; for they are white already to harvest. ³⁶ And he that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal: that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoice together. ³⁷ And herein is that saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. ³⁸ I sent you to reap that whereon ye bestowed no labour: other men laboured, and ye are entered into their labours.

³⁹ And many of the Sama-

John iv. 4—42.

ritans of that city believed on him, for the saying of the woman, which testified, He told me all that ever I did. ⁴⁰So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought him that he would tarry with them; and he abode there two days. ⁴¹And

many more believed because of his own word; ⁴²and said unto the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy saying: for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.

SECTION VI

THE NOBLEMAN FROM CAPERNAUM

John iv. 43—54.

⁴³Now after two days he departed thence, and went into Galilee. ⁴⁴For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no honour in his own country*. ⁴⁵Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast. ⁴⁶So Jesus came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick at Capernaum. ⁴⁷When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him,

and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son: for he was at the point of death. ⁴⁸Then said Jesus unto him, Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe. ⁴⁹The nobleman saith unto him, Sir, come down ere my child die. ⁵⁰Jesus saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went his way. ⁵¹And as he was now going down, his servants met him, and told *him*, saying, Thy son liveth. ⁵²Then enquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto

* See Nativity, p. 370.

John iv. 43—54.

him, Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him. ⁵³ So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself believed,

and his whole house. ⁵⁴ *This is again the second miracle that* Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

SECTION VII

THE JUBILEE ANNOUNCED AT NAZARETH

Luke iv. 14—30.

¹⁴ And there went out a fame of him through all the region round about. ¹⁵ And he taught in their synagogues, being glorified of all. ¹⁶ And he came to Nazareth*, where he had been brought up: and, as his custom was, he went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and stood up for to read. ¹⁷ And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Esaias. And when he had opened the book he found the place where it was written, ¹⁸ The Spirit of the Lord *is* upon me, because he hath anointed me to preach the gospel to the poor: he hath sent me to heal the broken-hearted, to preach deliverance to the captives, and recover-

ing of sight to the blind, to set at liberty them that are bruised, ¹⁹ to preach the acceptable year of the Lord. ²⁰ And he closed the book, and he gave *it* again to the minister, and sat down. And the eyes of all them that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. ²¹ And he began to say unto them, This day is this scripture fulfilled in your ears. ²² And all bare him witness, and wondered at the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth. And they said, Is not this Joseph's son? ²³ And he said unto them, Ye will surely say unto me this proverb, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do also here in

* See Nativity, pp. 378, 379, and Study of Gospels, p. 329.

Luke iv. 14—30.

thy country. ²⁴ And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is accepted in his own country. ²⁵ But I tell you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land; ²⁶ but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta, a city of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. ²⁷ And many lepers were in Israel

in the time of Eliseus the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian. ²⁸ And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things, were filled with wrath, ²⁹ and rose up, and thrust him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill (whereon their city was built), that they might cast him down headlong. ³⁰ But he passing through the midst of them went his way.

SECTION VIII

*THE CALL OF THE FOUR DISCIPLES ***Matt. iv. 13—16.*

¹³ And leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in the borders of Zabulon and Nephthalim. ¹⁴ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, ¹⁵ The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephthalim, by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles; ¹⁶ the people which sat in darkness, saw great light; and to them

Luke iv. 31.

³¹ And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee.

* See Nativity, pp. 397—402.

Matt. iv. 13—16.

which sat in the region and shadow of death, light is sprung up.

Matt. iv. 17—22.

¹⁷ From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

¹⁸ And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

¹⁹ And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.

²⁰ And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.

²¹ And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with Zebedee their father, mending their nets:

and he called them.

²² And they immediately left the ship and their father, and followed him.

Mark i. 14—20.

¹⁴ Preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, ¹⁵ and saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye and believe the Gospel.

¹⁶ Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw

Simon and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

¹⁷ And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

¹⁸ And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

¹⁹ And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets:

²⁰ And straightway he called them:

and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

SECTION IX

THE DEMONIAK HEALED

Mark i. 21—28.

²¹And they went into Capernaum; and straightway on the sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue,

and taught.

²²And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

²³And there was in their synagogue a man

with an

unclean spirit; and

he cried out,

²⁴Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

²⁵And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

²⁶And when the unclean spirit had

torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

²⁷And they were all amazed,

Luke iv. 31—37.

³¹And

on the sabbath-days he

taught them.

³²And they were astonished at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

³³And in the synagogue there was a man

which had a

spirit of an unclean

devil, and

he cried out with a loud voice,

³⁴Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? Art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God.

³⁵And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

And when the devil had thrown him in the midst,

he came out of him, and hurt him not.

³⁶And they were all amazed,

Mark i. 21—28.

insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What thing is this? what new doctrine is this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him.

²⁸ And immediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

Luke iv. 31—37.

and spake among themselves, saying,

What a word is this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.

³⁷ And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

SECTION X

Matt. viii. 14—17.

¹⁴ And when Jesus was
come

into Peter's house *,

he saw his wife's
mother laid, and sick of a
fever.

¹⁵ And he touched her
hand, and

the fever left her : and

she arose,
and ministered unto them.

¹⁶ When the even was
come,

they brought unto him many

that were possessed with
devils.

And he cast out the spirits
with his word,

and healed all that
were sick.

Mark i. 29—34.

²⁹ And forthwith, when they
were come out of the syna-
gogue, they entered
into the house of Simon
and Andrew, with James and
John.

³⁰ But Simon's wife's
mother lay sick of a
fever, and anon they tell him
of her.

³¹ And he came and took
her by the hand, and lifted
her up ; and immediately
the fever left her, and

she ministered unto them.

³² And at even †, when the
sun did set,
they brought unto him all that
were diseased, and them
that were possessed with
devils.

³³ And all the city was
gathered together at the door.

³⁴ And he healed many that
were sick of divers diseases,

* See Study of Gospels, p. 332.

† See Nativity, pp. 418, 419.

*THE EVENING OF THE SABBATH**Luke iv. 38—41.*

³⁸ And he
arose out of the synagogue,
and entered
into Simon's house.

And Simon's wife's mother
was taken with a great fever;
and they besought him for
her.

³⁹ And he stood over her,
and rebuked the fever;

and
it left her: and immediately
she arose
and ministered unto them.

⁴⁰ Now when the
sun was setting,
all they that had any sick with
divers diseases brought them
unto him;

and he laid his hands on
every one of them,
and healed them.

Matt. viii. 14—17.

Mark i. 29—34.
and cast out many devils;

¹⁷ That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses.

and suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

SECTION XI

Matt. iv. 23.—v. 1.

Mark i. 35—39.

³⁵ And in the morning, rising up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

³⁶ And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

³⁷ And when they had found him, they said unto him, All *men* seek for thee.

³⁸ And he said unto them,

Luke iv. 38—41.

⁴¹ And devils also came out
of many,

crying out, and saying,
Thou art Christ the Son of
God. And he rebuking *them*,
suffered them not to speak :
for they knew that he was
Christ.

THE MOUNT OF BEATITUDES

Luke iv. 42—44.

⁴² And when it was day,

he departed, and went
into a desert place :

and the people sought him
and came unto him, and
stayed him, that he should
not depart from them.

⁴³ And he said unto them,

Matt. iv. 23.—v. 1.

Mark i. 35—39.

Let us go into the next towns,
that I may preach there also :
for therefore came I forth.

²³And Jesus went about
all Galilee, teaching in their
synagogues,

and preaching the gospel of
the kingdom, and healing all
manner of sickness, and all
manner of disease,

among the people.

²⁴And his fame went
throughout all Syria : and
they brought unto him all sick
people that were taken with
divers diseases and torments,
and those which were pos-
sessed with devils, and those
which were lunatick, and
those that had the palsy ; and
he healed them.

²⁵And there followed him
great multitudes of people
from Galilee, and *from* De-
capolis, and *from* Jerusalem,
and *from* Judea, and *from*
beyond Jordan.

¹And seeing the multitudes,
he went up into a mountain :
and when he was set, his dis-
ciples came unto him.

³⁹And he
preached in their
synagogues throughout all
Galilee,

and cast out devils.

Luke iv. 42—44.

I must preach the kingdom
of God to other cities also :
for therefore am I sent.

⁴⁴And he

preached in the
synagogues of
Galilee.

SECTION XII

THE BEATITUDES

Matt. v. 2—16.

²And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying, ³Blessed *are* the poor in spirit: for their's is the kingdom of heaven. ⁴Blessed *are* they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. ⁵Blessed *are* the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. ⁶Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled. ⁷Blessed *are* the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. ⁸Blessed *are* the pure in heart: for they shall see God. ⁹Blessed *are* the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God. ¹⁰Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for their's is the kingdom of heaven. ¹¹Blessed are ye, when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall say all manner of evil against

you falsely, for my sake. ¹²Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great *is* your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

¹³Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. ¹⁴Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. ¹⁵Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. ¹⁶Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

SECTION XIII

THE LAW AND THE PROPHETS FULFILLED

Matt. v. 17—48.

¹⁷Think not that I am the Prophets: I am not come come to destroy the Law, or to destroy, but to fulfil. ¹⁸For

Matt. v. 17—48.

verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. ¹⁹ Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. ²⁰ For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven.

²¹ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: ²² but I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. ²³ Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought

against thee; ²⁴ leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. ²⁵ Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. ²⁶ Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing.

²⁷ Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: ²⁸ but I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. ²⁹ And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. ³⁰ And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that*

Matt. v. 17—48.

thy whole body should be cast into hell. ³¹ It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement: ³² but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery.

³³ Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: ³⁴ but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it is God's throne: ³⁵ nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the great King. ³⁶ Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. ³⁷ But let your communication be, Yea, yea; nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil. ³⁸ Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: ³⁹ but I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever

shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. ⁴⁰ And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloke also. ⁴¹ And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. ⁴² Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away. ⁴³ Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. ⁴⁴ But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you and persecute you; ⁴⁵ that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. ⁴⁶ For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even the publicans the same? ⁴⁷ And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the publicans so? ⁴⁸ Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect.

SECTION XIV

ALMS, PRAYER, AND FASTING

Matt. vi. 1—34.

¹Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. ²Therefore when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. ³But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: ⁴that *thine* alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly.

⁵And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. ⁶But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father

which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. ⁷But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. ⁸Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. ⁹After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. ¹⁰Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven. ¹¹Give us this day our daily bread. ¹²And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. ¹³And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For *thine* is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. ¹⁴For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: ¹⁵but if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Matt. vi. 1—34.

¹⁶ Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. ¹⁷ But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; ¹⁸ that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.

¹⁹ Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: ²⁰ but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: ²¹ for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. ²² The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. ²³ But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness!

²⁴ No man can serve two

masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon. ²⁵ Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? ²⁶ Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? ²⁷ Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? ²⁸ And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: ²⁹ and yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. ³⁰ Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe* you, O ye of little faith? ³¹ Therefore take no thought, saying,

Matt. vi. 1—34.

What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? ³²(for after all these things do the Gentiles seek:) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. ³³But seek ye first

the kingdom of God and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. ³⁴Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

SECTION XV

PROVERBIAL PRECEPTS OF THE GOSPEL

Matt. vii. 1—29.

¹Judge not, that ye be not judged. ²For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. ³And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? ⁴Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? ⁵Thou hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy brother's eye.

⁶Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither

cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.

⁷Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. ⁹Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? ¹⁰Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? ¹¹If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

Matt. vii. 1—29.

¹²Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets.

¹³Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide *is* the gate, and broad *is* the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: ¹⁴because strait *is* the gate, and narrow *is* the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.

¹⁵Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. ¹⁶Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles? ¹⁷Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. ¹⁸A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither *can* a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. ¹⁹Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. ²⁰Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

²¹Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the

will of my Father which is in heaven. ²²Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? ²³And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

²⁴Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: ²⁵and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. ²⁶And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: ²⁷and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

²⁸And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine: ²⁹for he taught them as *one* having authority, and not as the scribes.

SECTION XVI

THE MIRACULOUS DRAUGHT OF FISHES

Matt. viii. 1

¹ When he was come great multitudes followed down from the mountain, him.

Luke v. 1—11.

¹ And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Genesaret, ² and saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing *their* nets. ³ And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship.

⁴ Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. ⁵ And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. ⁶ And when they had

this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake. ⁷ And they beckoned unto *their* partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink. ⁸ When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. ⁹ For he was astonished, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken. ¹⁰ And so *was* also James, and John, the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men. ¹¹ And when they had brought their ships to land, they forsook all, and followed him*.

* See Nativity, pp. 489, 490.

SECTION XVII

*Matt. viii. 2—4.**Mark i. 40—45.*

²And, behold, there came a
leper,
and worshipped

him,

saying, Lord, if thou wilt,
thou canst make me clean.

³And Jesus
put forth *his* hand,
and touched him, saying,
I will; be thou
clean.

And

immediately his
leprosy was
cleansed.

⁴And Jesus saith unto him,
See thou tell no
man; but go thy way, shew
thyself to the priest, and offer
the gift
that Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.

⁴⁰And there came a leper to

him, beseeching
him, and kneeling
down to him, and
saying unto him, If thou wilt,
thou canst make me clean.

⁴¹And Jesus, moved with
compassion, put forth *his*
hand and touched him, and
saith unto him, I will; be thou
clean.

⁴²And as soon as he had
spoken, immediately the
leprosy departed from him,
and he was cleansed.

⁴³And he straitly charged
him, and forthwith sent him
away;

⁴⁴and saith unto him,
See thou say nothing to any
man: but go thy way, shew
thyself to the priest, and offer
for thy cleansing those things
which Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.

⁴⁵But he went out, and be-
gan to publish *it* much, and
to blaze abroad the matter,

THE LEPER HEALED

Luke v. 12—16.

¹²And it came to pass,
when he was in a certain city,
behold, a man full of leprosy :
who seeing Jesus,
fell on *his* face, and
besought him,

saying, Lord, if thou wilt,
thou canst make me clean.

¹³And he
put forth *his* hand,
and touched him, saying,
I will : be thou
clean :

and
immediately the
leprosy departed from him.

¹⁴And he charged him to
tell no
man ; but go, and shew
thyself to the priest, and offer
for thy cleansing, according
as Moses commanded,
for a testimony unto them.

¹⁵But so much the more
went there a fame abroad of
him :

Mark i. 40—45.

insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in desert places : and they came to him from every quarter.

SECTION XVIII

Matt. ix. 2—8.

Mark ii. 1—12.

¹And again he entered into Capernaum, after *some* days : and it was noised that he was in the house.

²And straightway many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not so much as about the door : and he preached the word unto them.

²And, behold, they brought to him a man sick

³And they come unto him, bringing one sick

Luke v. 12—16.

and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their infirmities.

¹⁶And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed.

THE CURE OF THE PARALYTIC

Luke v. 17—26.

¹⁷And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching, that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every town of Galilee, and Judea, and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was *present* to heal them.

¹⁸And, behold, men brought in a bed a man which was taken

Matt. ix. 2—8.

with the palsy,
lying on a bed:

Mark ii. 1—12.

of the palsy,
which was borne of four.

¹And when they could not
come nigh unto him for the

press, they uncovered the
roof where he was, and when
they had broken it up,
they let down

the bed
wherein the sick of the palsy
lay.

⁵When Jesus saw their
faith, he said unto the sick of
the palsy, Son,
thy sins be forgiven
thee.

⁶But there were certain of
the scribes sitting there, and
reasoning in their hearts,

⁷Why doth this *man* thus
speak blasphemies? who
can forgive sins, but God
only?

⁸And immediately, when
Jesus perceived
in his spirit, that
they so reasoned within them-
selves,

and Jesus seeing their
faith, said unto the sick of
the palsy, Son, be of good
cheer, thy sins be forgiven
thee.

³And, behold, certain of
the scribes
said within themselves;

This *man*
blasphemeth.

⁴And
Jesus knowing
their thoughts,

said, Wherefore
think ye evil

he said unto them, Why
reason ye these things

Luke v. 17—26.

with a palsy ;

and they sought *means* to bring him in, and to lay *him* before him.

¹⁹And when they could not find by what *way* they might bring him in, because of the multitude, they went upon the house-top,

and let him down through the tiling, with *his* couch,
into the midst before Jesus.

²⁰And when he saw their faith, he said unto him,

Man,

thy sins are forgiven thee.

²¹And

the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying,

Who is this which speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?

²²But when

Jesus perceived

their thoughts,

he answering,

said unto them, What reason ye

Matt. ix. 2—8.

in your hearts?

⁵For whether is easier to say,

Thy sins be forgiven thee;
or to say, Arise,

and walk?

⁶But that ye may know
that the Son of man hath
power on earth to forgive
sins,

(then saith he to the sick of
the palsy,)

Arise,
take up thy bed,
and go unto thine
house.

⁷And he

arose,

and departed

to his house.

⁸But when the multitude
saw it, they
marvelled,
and glorified God,
which had given such power
unto men.

Mark ii. 1—12.

in your hearts?

⁹Whether is it easier to say
to the sick of the palsy,
Thy sins be forgiven thee:
or to say, Arise,
and take up thy bed,
and walk?

¹⁰But that ye may know
that the Son of man hath
power on earth to forgive
sins,

(he saith to the sick of
the palsy,)

¹¹I say unto thee,
Arise, and
take up thy bed,
and go thy way into thine
house.

¹²And immediately he
arose,
took up the bed, and went
forth before them all;

insomuch that
they
were all amazed,
and glorified God,
saying, We never saw it on
this fashion.

Luke v. 17—26.

in your hearts?

²³ Whether is easier to say,

Thy sins be forgiven thee;
or to say, Rise up

and walk?

²⁴ But that ye may know
that the Son of man hath
power upon earth to forgive
sins,

(he said unto the sick of
the palsy,)

I say unto thee,
Arise, and
take up thy couch,
and go unto thine
house.

²⁵ And immediately he
rose up before them, and
took up that whereon he lay,
and departed
to his own house, glorifying
God.

²⁶ And they
were all amazed,
and they glorified God,
and were filled with fear,
saying, We have seen strange
things to-day.

SECTION XIX

Matt. ix. 9.

⁹And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and he saith unto him, Follow me.

And he arose, and followed him.

Mark ii. 13, 14.

¹³And he went forth again by the sea-side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

¹⁴And as he passed by, he saw Levi, the *son* of Alpheus, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him, Follow me.

And he arose, and followed him.

*THE CALLING OF ST. MATTHEW ***Luke v. 27, 28.*

²⁷And after these things he
went forth,

and saw a publican, named
Levi,
sitting at the receipt of cus-
tom; and he said unto him,
Follow me.

²⁸And he left all,
rose up, and followed
him.

* See Nativity, pp. 511—514.

PART IV

The Second Passover

OR, THE BEGINNING OF THE SECOND YEAR OF OUR
LORD'S MINISTRY

SECTION I

THE POOL OF BETHESDA

John v. 1—9.

AFTER this* there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. ²Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep market a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches. ³In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water. ⁴For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole of whatsoever disease he had. ⁵And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and eight years. ⁶When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole? ⁷The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man when the water is troubled to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me. ⁸Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk. ⁹And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 1, 2.

SECTION II

THE CHARGE OF BREAKING THE SABBATH

John v. 9—16.

⁹And on the same day was the sabbath. ¹⁰The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath-day: it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed. ¹¹He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. ¹²Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? ¹³And he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself

away, a multitude being in *that* place. ¹⁴Afterwards Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee. ¹⁵The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus, which had made him whole. ¹⁶And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath-day.

SECTION III

CHRIST THE RESURRECTION

John v. 17—29.

¹⁷But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. ¹⁸Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God. ¹⁹Then

answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. ²⁰For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all

John v. 17—29.

things that himself doeth: and he will shew him greater works than these, that ye may marvel. ²¹For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. ²²For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: ²³that all *men* should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. ²⁴Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from

death unto life. ²⁵Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. ²⁶For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; ²⁷and hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. ²⁸Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, ²⁹and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation.

SECTION IV

THE TESTIMONIES OF CHRIST

John v. 30—47.

³⁰I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. ³¹If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true.

³²There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. ³³Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. ³⁴But I receive not testimony from man: but these things

John v. 30—47.

I say, that ye might be saved.

³⁵ He was a burning and a shining light: and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light.

³⁶ But I have greater witness than *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. ³⁷ And the Father himself which hath sent me hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape.

³⁸ And ye have not his word abiding in you; for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not.

³⁹ Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life, and they are they which testify of me.

⁴⁰ And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

⁴¹ I receive not honour from men. ⁴² But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. ⁴³ I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not. If another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. ⁴⁴ How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that *cometh* from God only?

⁴⁵ Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is *one* that accuseth you, *even* Moses in whom ye trust. ⁴⁶ For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

⁴⁷ But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

SECTION V

Matt. xii. 1—8.

¹At that time Jesus went
on the sabbath-day

through the corn;

and his disciples
were an hungred, and began
to pluck the ears of corn,
and to eat.

²But when the
Pharisees saw *it*, they said
unto him, Behold, thy dis-
ciples do that which is not
lawful to do upon the sabbath-
day.

³But he
said unto them, Have ye not
read
what David did when he
was an hungred,
and they that were with
him,

⁴How he entered into the
house of God,

and did eat
the shew-bread,

which was not lawful for him

Mark ii. 23—28.

²³And it came to pass,
that he

went through the corn-fields
on the sabbath-day;
and his disciples

began, as they went,
to pluck the ears of corn.

²⁴And the
Pharisees said
unto him, Behold, why do
they on the sabbath-
day that which is not
lawful?

²⁵And he
said unto them, Have ye never
read
what David did, when he
had need, and was an hungred,
he, and they that were with
him?

²⁶How he went into the
house of God, in the days
of Abiathar the high priest,
and did eat
the shew-bread,

which is not lawful

PLUCKING THE EARS OF CORN ON THE SABBATH-DAY

Luke vi. 1—5.

¹And it came to pass on
the second sabbath
after the first*, that he went
through the corn-fields;

and his disciples

plucked the ears of corn,
and did eat,
rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

²And certain of the
Pharisees said
unto them, Why do ye that
which is not
lawful to do on the sabbath-
days?

³And Jesus answering them,
said, Have ye not
read so much as this,
what David did, when himself
was an hungred,
and they which were with
him;

⁴How he went into the
house of God,

and did take and eat
the shew-bread, and gave also
to them that were with him;
which is not lawful

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 31—33, and Study of Gospels, p. 335.

Matt. xii. 1—8.

to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests?

⁵ Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless?

⁶ But I say unto you, That in this place is *one* greater than the temple.

⁷ But if ye had known what *this* meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless.

⁸ For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath-day.

Mark ii. 23—28.

to eat,

but for the priests, and gave also to them which were with him?

²⁷ And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

²⁸ Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

SECTION VI

Matt. xii. 9—14.

⁹ And when he was departed thence,

he went into their synagogue.

Mark iii. 1—6.

¹ And he entered again into the synagogue;

Luke vi. 1—5.

to eat,

but for

the priests alone?

‘And he said unto them,

That the Son of man
is Lord also of the sabbath.

THE WITHERED HAND HEALED ON THE SABBATH

Luke vi. 6—11.

‘And

it came to pass also on another
sabbath,

that he entered
into the synagogue,
and taught:

Matt. xii. 9—14.

¹⁰ And, behold, there was a man which had *his*

hand withered.

And they asked him,

saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-days? that they might accuse him.

¹¹ And he said unto them, What man shall there be among you that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out?

¹² How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is lawful to do well on the sabbath-days.

Mark iii. 1—6.

and there was a

man there which had a withered hand.

² And they

watched him,

whether he would heal him on the sabbath-day; that they might accuse him.

³ And he saith unto the man which had the withered hand, Stand forth.

⁴ And he saith unto them,

Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-days, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

⁵ And when he had looked round about on them with anger, being grieved for the

Luke vi. 6—11.

and there was a

man whose right
hand was withered.

⁷And the scribes and
Pharisees
watched him,

whether he would heal
on the sabbath-day; that
they might find an accusation
against him.

⁸But he knew their thoughts,
and said to the
man which had the withered
hand, Rise up, and stand forth
in the midst. And he arose
and stood forth.

⁹Then said Jesus unto them,
I will ask you one thing,
Is it lawful on the
sabbath-days to do good, or
to do evil?
to save life, or to destroy *it*?

¹⁰And looking round about
upon them all,

Matt. xii. 9—14.

¹³Then saith he to the man,
Stretch forth thine hand. And
he stretched *it* forth;

and it was restored
whole like as the other.

¹⁴Then the Pharisees went
out

and held a council
against him, how they might
destroy him.

Mark iii. 1—6.

hardness of their hearts,

he saith unto the man,
Stretch forth thine hand. And
he stretched *it* out:

and his hand was restored
whole as the other.

⁶And the Pharisees went
forth, and straightway took
counsel, with the Herodians
against him, how they might
destroy him.

SECTION VII

CHRIST RETIRES TOWARD THE SEA

Matt. xii. 15—21.

¹⁵But when Jesus knew *it*,
he withdrew himself from
thence*:

and great multitudes
followed him.

Mark iii. 7—12.

⁷But
Jesus withdrew himself

with his disciples to the sea:
and a great multitude from
Galilee followed him,
and from Judea,

⁸And from Jerusalem, and
from Idumea, and *from* be-
yond Jordan; and they about
Tyre and Sidon, a great mul-
titude, when they had heard
what great things he did,
came unto him.

* See Study of Gospels, pp. 334, 335, and Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 44, 45.

Luke vi. 6—11.

he said unto the man,
Stretch forth thy hand. And
he did so :
and his hand was restored
whole as the other.

¹¹And they were filled with
madness ; and
communed one with another
what they might do to
Jesus.

Matt. xii. 15—21.

and he healed them all ;

¹⁶And charged
them that they should not
make him known :

Mark iii. 7—12.

⁹And he spake to his disciples, that a small ship should wait on him, because of the multitude, lest they should throng him.

¹⁰For he had healed many ; insomuch that they pressed upon him for to touch him, as many as had plagues.

¹¹And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God.

¹²And he straitly charged them, that they should not make him known.

Matt. xii. 15—21.

¹⁷That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying,

¹⁸Behold, my servant whom I have chosen; my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased: I will put my Spirit upon him, and he shall show judgment to the Gentiles.

¹⁹He shall not strive nor cry; neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets.

²⁰A bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he not quench, till he send forth judgment unto victory.

²¹And in his name shall the Gentiles trust.

SECTION VIII

Matt. x. 2—4.

Mark iii. 13—19.

¹³And

he goeth up
into a mountain,

and

calleth unto him
whom he would: and they
came unto him.

*ELECTION OF THE TWELVE APOSTLES**Luke vi. 12—16.*

¹²And it came to pass in those days that he went out into a mountain to pray, and continued all night in prayer to God.

¹³And when it was day, he called *unto him* his disciples :

Matt. x. 2—4.

² Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; The first Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother ;

James
the son of Zebedee,
and John his brother ;

³ Philip and Bartholomew ; Thomas, and Matthew the publican ;

James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus ;

⁴ Simon the Canaanite,

and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

Mark iii. 13—19.

¹⁴ And he ordained twelve *,

that they should be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach ;

¹⁵ And to have power to heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils.

¹⁶ And Simon he surnamed Peter ;

¹⁷ And James *the son* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James, and he surnamed them Boanerges, which is, The sons of thunder : ¹⁸ And Andrew, and Philip and Bartholomew, Matthew and Thomas,

and James *the son* of Alphaeus,

and Thaddeus,

and Simon the Canaanite,

¹⁹ And Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 56—60.

Luke vi. 12—16.

and of them he chose twelve,
whom also he named Apostles:

¹⁴ Simon, whom he also
named Peter,
and Andrew his brother;
James
and John;

Philip and Bartholomew;
¹⁵ Matthew and Thomas;

James the *son* of Alpheus,
and Simon called Zelotes;

¹⁶ and Judas
the brother of James;
and Judas Iscariot,
which also was the traitor.

SECTION IX

THE SERMON ON THE PLAIN

Luke vi. 17—26.

¹⁷ And he came down with them and stood in the plain* ; and the company of his disciples, and a great multitude of people out of all Judea and Jerusalem, and from the sea coasts of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases; ¹⁸ and they that were vexed with unclean spirits: and they were healed. ¹⁹ And the whole multitude sought to touch him: for there went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all. ²⁰ And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said, Blessed *be ye* poor: for your's is the kingdom of God. Blessed *are ye* that weep now: for ye shall laugh. ²¹ Blessed *are ye* that hunger now: for ye shall be filled. ²² Blessed

are ye when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from their company*, and shall reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. ²³ Rejoice ye in that day, and leap for joy: for, behold, your reward *is* great in heaven: for in the like manner did their fathers unto the prophets. ²⁴ But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. ²⁵ Woe unto you that are full! for ye shall hunger. Woe unto you that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep. ²⁶ Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for so did their fathers to the false prophets.

SECTION X

LAWS OF CHRISTIAN LOVE

Luke vi. 27—38.

²⁷ But I say unto you which good to them which hate you; hear, Love your enemies, do ²⁸ bless them that curse you,

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 60.

Luke vi. 27—38.

and pray for them which despitefully use you. ²⁹And unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also the other; and him that taketh away thy cloke, forbid not to take thy coat also. ³⁰Give to every man that asketh of thee; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not again. ³¹And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. ³²For if ye love them which love you, what thank have ye? for sinners also love those that love them. ³³And if ye do good to them which do good to you, what thank have ye? for sinners also do even the same. ³⁴And if ye lend to *them*, of whom ye hope to receive, what thank have ye? for sinners also

lend to sinners, to receive as much again. ³⁵But love ye your enemies, and do good, and lend, hoping for nothing again; and your reward shall be great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest: for he is kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. ³⁶Be ye therefore merciful, as your Father also is merciful. ³⁷Judge not, and ye shall not be judged: condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: forgive, and ye shall be forgiven: ³⁸give, and it shall be given unto you: good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal, it shall be measured to you again.

SECTION XI

LAWS OF SELF-CONDUCT

Luke vi. 39—49.

³⁹And he spake a parable unto them, Can the blind lead the blind? shall they not both fall into the ditch? ⁴⁰The disciple is not above his master: but every one that is per-

fect, shall be as his master. ⁴¹And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine own eye? ⁴²Either how canst

Luke vi. 39—49.

thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that is in thy brother's eye. ⁴³ For a good tree bringeth not forth corrupt fruit: neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. ⁴⁴ For every tree is known by his own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble bush gather they grapes. ⁴⁵ A good man, out of the good treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is good: and an evil man out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that which is evil: for of the

abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

⁴⁶ And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say? ⁴⁷ Whosoever cometh to me and heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like. ⁴⁸ He is like a man which built an house, and digged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock: and when the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house, and could not shake it: for it was founded upon a rock. ⁴⁹ But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without a foundation, built an house upon the earth, against which the stream did beat vehemently, and immediately it fell, and the ruin of that house was great.

SECTION XII

THE CENTURION'S SERVANT *

Matt. viii. 5—13.

Luke vii. 1—10.

¹ Now when he had ended all his sayings in the audience

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 83, 84.

Matt. viii. 5—13.

⁵And when Jesus was
entered into Capernaum,

there came
unto him a centurion,
beseeching him,

⁶And saying, Lord, my ser-
vant lieth at home sick of the
palsy, grievously tormented.

⁷And Jesus saith unto him,
I will come and heal him.

⁸The centurion

answered and said,
Lord,
I am not worthy that thou
shouldest come under my roof:

but speak the word only,

Luke vii. 1—10.

of the people, he
entered into Capernaum.

²And a certain centurion's
servant, who was dear unto
him, was sick, and ready to
die.

³And when he heard of
Jesus, he sent
unto him the elders of the
Jews, beseeching him,
that he would come and heal
his servant.

⁴And when they came to
Jesus, they besought him in-
stantly, saying, That he was
worthy for whom he should
do this.

⁵For he loveth our nation,
and he hath built us a syna-
gogue.

⁶Then Jesus went with
them. And when he was
now not far from the house,
the centurion

sent friends to him,
saying unto him,
Lord, trouble not thyself, for
I am not worthy that thou
shouldest enter under my roof.

⁷Wherefore neither thought
I myself worthy to come unto
thee: but say in a word,

Matt. viii. 5—13.

and my servant shall be healed.

⁹ For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me: and I say to this *man*, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

¹⁰ When Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled,

and said to them that followed, Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

¹¹ And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.

¹² But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

¹³ And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; and as thou hast believed, *so* be it done unto thee.

And his servant was healed
in the self-same hour.

Luke vii. 1—10.

and my servant shall be healed.

⁸ For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers: and I say unto one, Go, and he goeth, and to another, Come, and he cometh: and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

⁹ When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and said unto the people that followed him, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

¹⁰ And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.

SECTION XIII

THE WIDOW'S SON AT NAIN

Luke vii. 11—17.

¹¹And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain*; and many of his disciples went with him, and much people. ¹²Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. ¹³And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. ¹⁴And he came and touched the bier;

and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. ¹⁵And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he delivered him to his mother. ¹⁶And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, saying, That a great prophet is risen up among us: and, That God hath visited his people. ¹⁷And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

SECTION XIV

MESSAGE FROM JOHN IN PRISON

Matt. xi. 2—15.

²Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ †,

he sent two of his disciples,

³And said unto him, Art

Luke vii. 18—28.

¹⁸And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.

¹⁹And John calling *unto him* two of his disciples, sent *them* to Jesus, saying, Art

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 95

† See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 106.

Matt. xi. 2—15.

thou he that should come, or
do we look for another?

⁴Jesus answered and said
unto them, Go and
shew John again those things
which ye do hear and see.

⁵The blind receive their
sight, and the lame walk, the
lepers are cleansed, and the
deaf hear, the dead are raised
up, and the poor have the gos-
pel preached to them.

⁶And blessed is *he* whoso-
evershall not be offended in me.

⁷And as they
departed, Jesus
began to say unto the multi-
tudes concerning John, What
went ye out into the wilder-
ness to see? A reed shaken
with the wind?

⁸But what went ye out for
to see? A man clothed in soft
raiment? Behold, they that
wear soft *clothing*

Luke vii. 18—28.

thou he that should come, or
look we for another?

²⁰When the men were come
unto him, they said, John
Baptist hath sent us unto
thee, saying, Art thou he that
should come, or look we for
another?

²¹And in the same hour, he
cured many of *their* infirmi-
ties, and plagues, and of evil
spirits, and unto many *that*
were blind he gave sight.

²²Then Jesus, answering,
said unto them, Go your way,
and tell John what things ye
have seen and heard,

how that the blind
see, the lame walk, the
lepers are cleansed, the
deaf hear, the dead are raised,
to the poor the gospel is
preached.

²³And blessed is *he* whoso-
evershall not be offended in me.

²⁴And when the messengers
of John were departed, he
began to speak unto the peo-
ple concerning John, What
went ye out into the wilder-
ness for to see? A reed
shaken with the wind?

²⁵But what went ye out for
to see? A man clothed in soft
raiment? Behold, they which
are gorgeously apparelled, and
live delicately,

Matt. xi. 2—15.

are in kings' houses.

⁹ But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, And more than a prophet.

¹⁰ For this is *he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

¹¹ Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women, there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

¹² And from the days of John the Baptist until now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and the violent take it by force. ¹³ For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. ¹⁴ And if ye will receive *it*, this is Elias which was for to come. ¹⁵ He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Luke vii. 18—28.

are in kings' courts.

²⁶ But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

²⁷ This *is he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

²⁸ For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist; but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

SECTION XV

THE BAPTIST AND CHRIST BOTH REJECTED

Matt. xi. 16—30.

¹⁶ But whereunto
shall I liken
this generation?

It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows,

¹⁷ And saying,
We have piped unto you,
and ye have not danced: we
have mourned unto you, and
ye have not lamented.

¹⁸ For John
came neither eating
nor drinking, and they
say, He hath a devil.

¹⁹ The Son of man came
eating and drinking, and they
say, Behold, a man gluttonous,
and a wine-bibber, a friend of
publicans and sinners.

But wisdom is justified
of her children.

Luke vii. 29—35.

²⁹ And all the people that
heard *him*, and the publicans,
justified God, being baptized
with the baptism of John.
³⁰ But the Pharisees and law-
yers rejected the counsel of
God against themselves, being
not baptized of him.

³¹ And the Lord said,
Whereunto
then shall I liken the men of
this generation?
and to what are they like?

³² They are like unto children sitting in the marketplace, and calling one to another,

and saying,
We have piped unto you,
and ye have not danced: we
have mourned to you, and
ye have not wept.

³³ For John the Baptist
came neither eating bread
nor drinking wine; and ye
say, He hath a devil.

³⁴ The Son of man is come
eating and drinking; and ye
say, Behold, a gluttonous man,
and a wine-bibber, a friend of
publicans and sinners.

³⁵ But wisdom is justified
of all her children.

Matt. xi. 16—30.

²⁰ Then began * he to unbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

²¹ Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works which were done in you, had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes.

²² But I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment than for you.

²³ And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell: for if the mighty works which have been done in thee, had been done in Sodom, it would have remained unto this day.

²⁴ But I say unto you, That it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment than for thee.

²⁵ At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. ²⁶ Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight. ²⁷ All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*.

²⁸ Come unto me, all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

²⁹ Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. ³⁰ For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is light.

SECTION XVI

*THE SINNER ANOINTING CHRIST'S FEET †**Luke vii. 36—50.*

³⁶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 122, and Study of Gospels, pp. 336, 337.

† Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 129—132.

Luke vii. 36—50.

down to meat. ³⁷And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment, ³⁸and stood at his feet, behind *him*, weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. ³⁹Now when the Pharisee, which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner. ⁴⁰And *Jesus* answering, said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. ⁴¹There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. ⁴²And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore which of them will love him most? ⁴³Simon answered and said, I

suppose that *he* to whom he forgave most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged. ⁴⁴And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head. ⁴⁵Thou gavest me no kiss: but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. ⁴⁶My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. ⁴⁶Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the same* loveth little. ⁴⁸And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. ⁴⁹And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgiveth sins also? ⁵⁰And he said to the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee: go in peace.

SECTION XVII

CIRCUIT THROUGH GALILEE

Luke viii. 1—3.

¹And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve *were* with him; ²and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits

and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went seven devils, ³and Joanna the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

PART V

Christ with the Twelve

SECTION I

Matt. xii. 22—37.

²²Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw.

²³And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?

²⁴But when the Pharisees heard it,

Mark iii. 19—30.

¹⁹And they went into an house*. ²⁰And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. ²¹And when his friends heard of it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

²²And the scribes which

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 141—144.

THE DEMONIAK HEALED AT CAPERNAUM

Luke xi. 14, 15. 17—23.

¹⁴And he was casting out
a devil, and it was dumb.
And it came to pass, when
the devil was gone out, the
dumb spake :
and the people
wondered.

¹⁵ But some of

Matt. xii. 22—37.

they said, This *fellow* doth
not cast out devils, but by
Beelzebub, the
prince of the devils.

²⁵And Jesus knew their
thoughts,

and said
unto them,

Every kingdom
divided against itself, is
brought to desolation ;
and every city or house
divided against itself,
shall not stand.

²⁶And if Satan cast
out Satan, he is
divided against himself;
how shall then
his kingdom stand ?

²⁷And if I by Beelzebub
cast out devils, by whom do
your children cast *them* out ?
therefore they shall be your
judges.

²⁸But if I cast out devils by
the Spirit of God, then
the kingdom of God is come
unto you.

²⁹Or else how can one enter
into a strong man's house, and

Mark iii. 19—30.

came down from Jerusalem,
said, He hath

Beelzebub, and by the
prince of the devils casteth he
out devils.

²³And he

called them *unto him*, and said
unto them in parables,
How can Satan cast out
Satan ?

²⁴And if a kingdom be
divided against itself, that
kingdom cannot stand.

²⁵And if a house be
divided against itself that
house cannot stand.

²⁶And if Satan rise up
against himself, and be
divided,

he cannot stand,
but hath an end.

²⁷No man can enter
into a strong man's house, and

Luke xi. 14, 15. 17—23.

them said, He
casteth out devils through
Beelzebub, the
chief of the devils.

17 But he knowing their
thoughts,
said
unto them,

Every kingdom
divided against itself, is
brought to desolation ;
and a house
divided against a house,
falleth.

¹⁸ If Satan also be
divided against himself;
his kingdom stand? how shall

because ye say that I cast out
devils through Beelzebub.

¹⁹And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? therefore shall they be your judges.

²⁰ But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

²¹ When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods

Matt. xii. 22—37.

spoil his goods,
except he first bind the
strong man ?

and then he will spoil his
house.

³⁰ He that is not with me,
is against me: and he that
gathereth not with me, scat-
tereth abroad.

³¹ Wherefore I say unto you,
All manner of sin and blas-
phemy shall be forgiven unto
men :

but the blasphemy *against*
the *Holy* Ghost shall not be
forgiven unto men.

³² And whosoever speaketh
a word against the Son of man,
it shall be forgiven him :

but whosoever
speaketh against the Holy
Ghost, it shall not be forgiven
him,
neither in this world, neither
in the *world* to come,

³³ Either make the tree
good, and his fruit good; or
else make the tree corrupt,

Mark iii. 19—30.

spoil his goods,
except he will first bind the
strong man :

and then he will spoil his
house.

²⁸ Verily I say unto you,
All sins shall be forgiven unto
the sons of men, and blas-
phemies

wherewith
soever they shall blaspheme :

²⁹ But he that shall
blaspheme against the Holy
Ghost, hath never forgive-
ness,

but is in danger of eternal
damnation :

³⁰ Because they said, He
hath an unclean spirit.

Luke xi. 14, 15. 17—23.

are in peace.

²² But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he trusted,

and divideth his spoils.

²³ He that is not with me, is against me: and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.

Matt. xii. 22—37.

and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit.
³⁴ O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. ³⁵ A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out

of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. ³⁶ But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof, in the day of judgment. ³⁷ For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

SECTION II

*THE PHARISEES SEEK A SIGN ***Matt. xii. 38—42.*

³⁸ Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered,

saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

³⁹ But

he answered and said unto them,
 An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas.

Luke xi. 16. 29—36.

¹⁶ And others,

tempting *him*,

sought of him a sign

from heaven.

²⁹ And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say,

This is an evil generation: they seek a sign; and there shall no sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas the prophet.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 155, 15

Matt. xii. 38—42.

⁴⁰For as Jonas was

three days and three nights in the whale's belly :

so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

⁴¹The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

⁴²The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

Luke xi. 16. 29—36.

³⁰For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites,

so shall also the Son of man be

to this generation.

³²The men of Nineve shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

³¹The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them: for she came from the utmost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

³³No man * when he hath lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light. ³⁴The light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light ; but when

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 161—163.

Luke xi. 16. 29—36.

thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. ³⁵Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness. ³⁶If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light; as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.

SECTION III

THE UNCLEAN SPIRIT RETURNING

Matt xii. 43—45.

⁴³When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none.

⁴⁴Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out;

and when he is come, he findeth it empty,

swept, and garnished.

⁴⁵Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits

more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man

Luke xi. 24—26.

²⁴When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none,

he saith, I will return unto mine house from whence I came out.

²⁵And when he cometh, he findeth it

swept and garnished.

²⁶Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits

more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last *state* of that man

Matt. xii. 43—45.

is worse than the first.

Even so shall it be also unto
this wicked generation.

Luke xi. 24—26.

is worse than the first.

SECTION IV

Matt. xii. 46—50.

⁴⁶ While he yet talked to the people,

behold,
his mother and his brethren
stood without.

desiring to speak with him.

Mark iii. 31—35.

³¹There came then
his brethren and his mother,
and standing without,
sent unto him, calling him.

^{s2}And the multitude sat about him.

⁴⁷Then one said unto him,

and they said unto him,

Behold,
thy mother and thy brethren
stand without.

desiring

Behold,
thy mother and thy brethren
without

OUR LORD'S MOTHER AND BRETHREN COME TO HIM

Luke viii. 19.

¹⁹ Then came to him
his mother and his brethren,

and could not come at him for
the press.

Luke xi. 27, 28.*

²⁷ And it came to pass, as he
spake these things, a certain
woman of the company lifted
up her voice, and said unto
him, Blessed *is* the womb that
bare thee, and the paps which
thou hast sucked. ²⁸ But he
said, Yea, rather blessed *are*
they that hear the word of
God, and keep it.

Luke viii. 20, 21.

²⁰ And it was told him *by*
certain, which said,

Thy mother and thy brethren
stand without,

desiring

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 168—170.

Matt. xii. 46—50.

to speak with thee.

⁴⁸ But he answered and said unto him that told him, Who is my mother ? and who are my brethren ?

⁴⁹ And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren !

⁵⁰ For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven,

the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

Mark iii. 31—35.

seek for thee.

³³ And he answered them, saying, Who is my mother, or my brethren ?

³⁴ And he looked round about on them which sat about him,

and said, Behold my mother and my brethren !

³⁵ For whosoever shall do the will of God,

the same is my brother, and my sister, and mother.

SECTION V

CHRIST DINES WITH A PHARISEE

Luke xi. 37—54.

³⁷ And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him : and he went in, and sat down to meat *. ³⁸ And when the Pharisee saw *it*, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. ³⁹ And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the

platter ; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness. ⁴⁰ Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also ? ⁴¹ But rather give alms of such things as ye have : and, behold, all things are clean unto you. ⁴² But woe unto you, Pharisees ! for ye tithe the mint, and rue, and

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 175--177.

Luke viii. 20, 21.

to see thee.

²¹And he answered and said
unto them,

My mother

and my brethren
are these
which hear the
word of God,
and do it.

Luke xi. 37—54.

all manner of herbs, and pass
over judgment and the love
of God: these ought ye to
have done, and not to leave
the other undone. ⁴³ Woe
unto you, Pharisees! for ye
love the uppermost seats in
the synagogues, and greetings
in the markets. ⁴⁴ Woe unto
you, scribes and Pharisees,
hypocrites! for ye are as
graves which appear not, and

the men that walk over *them*
are not aware *of them*.

⁴⁵ Then answered one of the
lawyers, and said unto him,
Master, thus saying, thou re-
proachest us also. ⁴⁶ And he
said, Woe unto you also, *ye*
lawyers! for ye lade men
with burdens grievous to
be borne, and ye yourselves
touch not the burdens with
one of your fingers. ⁴⁷ Woe

Luke xi. 37—54.

unto you! for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, and your fathers killed them.

⁴⁸ Truly ye bear witness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers: for they indeed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. ⁴⁹ Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send them prophets and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and persecute: ⁵⁰ that the blood of all the prophets which were shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; ⁵¹ from the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacha-

rias, which perished between the altar and the temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation.

⁵² Woe unto you, lawyers! for ye have taken away the key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in, ye hindered.

⁵³ And as he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees began to urge *him* vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of many things; ⁵⁴ laying wait for him, and seeking to catch something out of his mouth, that they might accuse him.

SECTION VI

*DISCIPLES WARNED AGAINST HYPOCRISY**Luke xii. 1—12.*

¹ In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people*, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. ² For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed;

neither hid, that shall not be known. ³ Therefore whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the light; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets, shall be proclaimed upon the house-tops. ⁴ And I say unto you, my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 185, 186.

Luke xii. 1—12.

they can do. ⁵ But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which, after he hath killed, hath power to cast into hell: yea, I say unto you, Fear him. ⁶ Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? ⁷ But even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. ⁸ Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels

of God. ⁹ But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God. ¹⁰ And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. ¹¹ And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: ¹² for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

SECTION VII

*THE RICH MAN DYING SUDDENLY**Luke xii. 13—21.*

¹³ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. ¹⁴ And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you? ¹⁵ And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. ¹⁶ And he spake a parable unto them, saying,

The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: ¹⁷ and he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? ¹⁸ And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits, and my goods. ¹⁹ And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years,

Luke xii. 13—21.

take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. ²⁰But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided? ²¹So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

SECTION VIII

*DISCIPLES EXHORTED TO HEAVENLYMINDEDNESS**Luke xii. 22—40.*

²²And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body, what ye shall put on*. ²³The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment. ²⁴Consider the ravens: for they neither sow, nor reap; which neither have store-house, nor barn; and God feedeth them: how much more are ye better than the fowls! ²⁵And which of you with taking thought, can add to his stature one cubit! ²⁶If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest? ²⁷Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. ²⁸If then God so clothe the grass, which is to-day in the field, and to-morrow is cast into the oven: how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith? ²⁹And seek not ye what ye shall eat or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. ³⁰For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these things. ³¹But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all these things shall be added unto you. ³²Fear not, little flock: for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the kingdom. ³³Sell that ye have, and give alms: provide yourselves bags which wax not old, a

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 197.

Luke xii. 22--40.

treasure in the heavens, that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth corrupteth. ³⁴For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. ³⁵Let your loins be girded about, and *your* lights burning; ³⁶and ye yourselves like unto men that wait for their Lord, when he will return from the wedding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open unto him immediately. ³⁷Blessed *are* those servants, whom the Lord when he cometh, shall find watching: verily I

say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. ³⁸And if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third watch, and find *them* so, blessed are those servants. ³⁹And this know, that if the good-man of the house had known what hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and not have suffered his house to be broken through. ⁴⁰Be ye therefore ready also: for the Son of man cometh at an hour when ye think not.

SECTION IX

*THE CHURCH EXHORTED TO WATCH**Luke xii. 41--59.*

⁴¹Then Peter said unto him, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all *? ⁴²And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to give *them their* portion of meat in due season? ⁴³Blessed *is* that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so

doing. ⁴⁴Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler over all that he hath. ⁴⁵But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; ⁴⁶the Lord of that servant will come in a day when he looketh not

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 205.

Luke xii. 41—59.

for *him*, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. ⁴⁷And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many *stripes*. ⁴⁸But he that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few *stripes*. For unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

⁴⁹I am come to send fire on the earth, and what will I, if it be already kindled? ⁵⁰But I have a baptism to be baptized with, and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! ⁵¹Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division. ⁵²For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. ⁵³The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father;

the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law.

⁵⁴And he said also to the people, When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it is. ⁵⁵And when ye see the south wind blow, ye say, There will be heat; and it cometh to pass. ⁵⁶Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky, and of the earth; but how is it that ye do not discern this time? ⁵⁷Yea, and why even of yourselves judge ye not what is right?

⁵⁸When thou goest with thine adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer cast thee into prison. ⁵⁹I tell thee, thou shalt not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

SECTION X

THE GALILEANS SLAIN BY PILATE

Luke xiii. 1—9.

¹There were present at that season some that told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. ²And Jesus answering, said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they suffered such things? ³I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. ⁴Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? ⁵I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall

all likewise perish.

⁶He spake also this parable; A certain *man* had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none.

⁷Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

⁸And he answering, said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: ⁹and if it bear fruit, *well*: and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down*.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 215, 216, and Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 315, 316.

SECTION XI

Matt. xiii. 1—9. 24—30.

¹The same day went Jesus
out of the house, and sat

by the sea-side*.

²And great multi-
tudes were gathered together
unto him,

so that he went into a ship,
and sat;

and the whole multitude

stood on the shore.

³And he spake
many things unto them in
parables, saying,

Behold, a
sower went forth to sow;

⁴And when
he sowed, some *seeds* fell by
the way-side,

and the fowls
came and devoured them up.

⁵Some fell upon stony
places, where they had not
much earth: and forthwith
they sprung up, because they
had no deepness of earth.

Mark iv. 1—9. 26—29.

¹And he began again to
teach by the sea-side;
and there was a great multi-
tude gathered
unto him,

so that he entered into a ship,
and sat in the sea;

and the whole multitude
was by the sea,
on the land.

²And he taught them
many things
by parables, and said unto
them in his doctrine,

³Hearken;
Behold, there went out a
sower to sow:

⁴And it came to pass, as
he sowed, some fell by
the way-side,

and the fowls of the air
came and devoured it up.

⁵And some fell on stony
ground, where it had not
much earth; and immediately
it sprang up, because it had
no depth of earth.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 218.

THE PARABLES OF THE SOWER, THE SEED, AND THE
TARES

Luke vii. 4—8.

4And when much people
were gathered together, and
were come to him
out of every city,

he spake

by a parable:

⁵A sower went out to sow his seed;

and as

he sowed, some fell by
the way-side;
and it was trodden down,
and the fowls of the air
devoured it.

⁶And some fell upon a rock;

and as soon as

it was sprung up,

Matt. xiii. 1—9. 24—30.

⁶And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

⁷And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them.

⁸But other fell into good ground,

and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

⁹Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Mark iv. 1—9. 26—29.

⁶But when the sun was up, it was scorched; and because it had no root, it withered away.

⁷And some fell among thorns, and the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.

⁸And other fell on good ground, and did yield fruit that sprang up and increased, and brought forth, some thirty, and some sixty, and some an hundred.

⁹And he said unto them, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

Mark iv. 26—29.

²⁶And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed into the ground, ²⁷and should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. ²⁸For the earth bringeth forth

fruit of herself; first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear. ²⁹But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come.

Matt. xiii. 24—30.

²⁴Another parable put he forth unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good

seed in his field: ²⁵but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

Luke viii. 4—8.

it withered
away,
because it lacked moisture.

⁷ And some fell among
thorns; and the thorns sprang
up with it, and choked it.

⁸ And other fell on good
ground,
and sprang up,
and bare fruit,

an hundredfold.
And when he had said these
things, he cried,
He that hath ears to hear,
let him hear*.

Matt. xiii. 24—30.

²⁶ But when the blade was
sprung up, and brought forth
fruit, then appeared the tares
also. ²⁷ So the servants of the
householder came, and said
unto him, Sir, didst not thou
sow good seed in thy field?
from whence then hath it
tares? ²⁸ He said unto them,
An enemy hath done this.
The servants said unto him,
Wilt thou then that we go

and gather them up? ²⁹ But
he said, Nay; lest while ye
gather up the tares, ye root
up also the wheat with them.
³⁰ Let both grow together until
the harvest: and in the time
of harvest I will say to the
reapers, Gather ye together
first the tares, and bind them
in bundles to burn them: but
gather the wheat into my
barn.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 220—223.

SECTION XII

Matt. xiii. 31—35.

³¹ Another parable put he forth unto them, saying,

The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his field :

³² Which indeed s the least of all seeds :

but when it is grown,
it is the greatest among herbs,

and becometh a tree,
so that the birds of the air come and lodge
in the branches thereof.

³³ Another parable spake he unto them ; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal till the whole was leavened.

³⁴ All these things spake Jesus unto the multitude in parables * ;

Mark iv. 30—34.

³⁰ And he said,
Whereunto shall we liken the kingdom of God ? or with what comparison shall we compare it ?

³¹ *It*
is like a grain of mustard-seed, which
when it is sown in the earth,

is less than all the seeds that be in the earth.

³² But when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches ;

so that the fowls of the air may lodge
under the shadow of it.

³³ And with many such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were able

* See Study of Gospels, p. 114.

THE MUSTARD SEED AND THE LEAVEN

Luke xiii. 18—21 *.

¹⁸ Then said he,
Unto what is the kingdom
of God like? And whereunto
shall I resemble
it?

¹⁹ It
is like a grain of mustard-
seed, which a man took, and
cast into his garden;

and it
grew and

waxed a great tree :
and the fowls of the air
lodged
in the branches of it.

²⁰ And again he said, Where-
unto shall I liken the king-
dom of God?

²¹ It is like leaven, which a
woman took and hid in three
measures of meal, till the
whole was leavened.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 227, 228.

Matt. xiii. 31—35.

and without a parable
spake he not unto them.

³⁵ That it might be fulfilled
which was spoken by the pro-
phet, saying, I will open my
mouth in parables; I will utter
things which have been kept
secret from the foundation of
the world.

Mark iv. 30—34.

to hear it.

³⁴ But without a parable
spake he not unto them :

and when they were alone,
he expounded all things to
his disciples.

SECTION XIII

Matt. xiii. 36. 10—23.

³⁶ Then Jesus sent the mul-
titude away, and went into
the house.

¹⁰ And

the disciples came, and said
unto him,
Why speakest thou unto them
in parables ?

¹¹ He answered
and said unto them,
Because it is given unto you
to know the mysteries of the
kingdom of heaven, but to
them

Mark iv. 10—25.

¹⁰ And when he was alone,
they that were about him
with the twelve, asked of
him

the parable.

¹¹ And he said unto them.
Unto you it is given
to know the mystery of the
kingdom of God : but unto
them that are without, all
these things are done in

*PARABLE OF THE SOWER EXPLAINED**Luke viii. 9—18.*

And

his disciples asked
him, saying,

What might this parable be?

¹⁰ And he said,
Unto you it is given
to know the mysteries of the
kingdom of God: but to
others

in

Matt. xiii. 10—23.

it is not given.

¹² For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

¹³ Therefore speak I to them in parables:

because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they

hear not,
neither do they understand.

¹⁴ And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive.

¹⁵ For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. ¹⁶ But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear.

¹⁷ For verily I say unto you.

Mark iv. 10—25.

parables;

¹² That seeing they may see, and not perceive; and hearing they may hear,

and not understand;
lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven them.

Luke viii. 9—18.

parables;

that seeing they might
not see, and hearing they

might not understand.

Matt. xiii. 10—23.

That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

¹⁸ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

¹⁹ When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not,
then cometh
the wicked *one*,

and catcheth
away that which was sown
in his heart.
This is he which received seed
by the way-side.

²⁰ But he that received the seed into
stony places, the same is he
that heareth the word, and
anon

Mark iv. 10—25.

¹³ And he said unto them,
Know ye not this parable?
and how then will ye know
all parables?

¹⁴ The sower soweth the word.

¹⁵ And these are they
by the way-side,
where the word is sown; but
when they have heard,

Satan cometh
immediately,

and taketh
away the word that was sown
in their hearts.

¹⁶ And these are they like-
wise which are sown on
stony ground; who, when they
have heard the word, imme-
diately

Luke viii. 9—18.

¹¹ Now the parable is this :
The seed is the word of
God.

¹² Those
by the way-side,
are they that hear ;

then cometh
the devil

and taketh
away the word out of their
hearts,

lest they should believe, and
be saved.

¹³ They on the
rock *are they*, which, when
they hear,

Matt. xiii. 10—23.

with joy receiveth it;

²¹ Yet hath he not root in himself,
but dureth for awhile: for

when tribulation or persecution

ariseth because of the word,
by and by he is offended.

²² He also that received seed
among the thorns, is he that
heareth the word;

and the care of this
world and the deceitfulness
of riches,

choke the word, and he
becometh unfruitful.

²³ But he that received seed
into the good ground, is he
that
heareth the word, and under-
standeth it,

which also beareth
fruit, and bringeth forth, some
an hundred-fold, some sixty,
some thirty.

Mark iv. 10—25.

receive it with gladness;

¹⁷ And have no root in them-
selves, and so
endure but for a time: after-
ward

when affliction or persecution

ariseth for the word's sake,
immediately they are offended.

¹⁸ And these are they which
are sown among thorns; such
as hear the word,

¹⁹ And the cares of this
world, and the deceitfulness
of riches, and
the lusts of other things enter-
ing in,

choke the word, and it
becometh unfruitful.

²⁰ And these are they which
are sown on good ground;
such as

hear the word, and
receive it, and

bring forth
fruit, some
thirty-fold, some sixty, and
some an hundred.

²¹ And he said unto them,
Is a candle brought to be put
under a bushel, or under a
bed? and not to be set on a
candlestick?

Luke viii. 9—18.

receive the word with joy ;
and these have no root,
which
for a while believe,

and in time of temptation

fall away.

¹⁴And that which fell among
thorns are they, which, when
they have heard,
go forth, and are choked
with cares

and riches and
pleasures of *this* life,

and
bring no fruit to perfection.

¹⁵But that on
the good ground are they,
which, in an honest and good
heart, having heard the word,

keep *it*, and
bring forth
fruit

with patience.

¹⁶No man, when he hath
lighted a candle, covereth it
with a vessel, or putteth *it*
under a bed ; but setteth *it* on
a candlestick, that they which
enter in may see the light.

Mark iv. 10—25.

²² For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come abroad.

²³ If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.

²⁴ And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear:

with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear, shall more be given.

²⁵ For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he hath.

Luke viii. 9—18.

¹⁷ For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither *any thing* hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.

¹⁸ Take heed therefore how ye hear:

for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.

SECTION XIV

PARABLE OF THE TARES EXPLAINED

Matt. xiii. 36—43.

³⁶ And his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field *. ³⁷ He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; ³⁸ the field is

the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one*; ³⁹ the enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 251, 252.

Matt. xiii. 36—43.

are the angels. ⁴⁰ As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

⁴¹ The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them

which do iniquity; ⁴² and shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. ⁴³ Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun, in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

SECTION XV

PARABLES OF THE TREASURE, THE PEARL, AND THE NET

Matt. xiii. 44—52.

⁴⁴ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which, when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field.

⁴⁵ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchantman seeking goodly pearls: ⁴⁶ who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it.

⁴⁷ Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:

⁴⁸ which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. ⁴⁹ So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, ⁵⁰ and shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth.

⁵¹ Jesus saith unto them, Have ye understood all these things? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. ⁵² Then said he unto them, Therefore every scribe *which is* instructed unto

Matt. xiii. 44—52.

the kingdom of heaven, is like out of his treasure things new
unto a man *that is* an house- and old.
holder, which bringeth forth

SECTION XVI

Matt. xiii. 53.

⁵³ And it came to pass,
that when Jesus had finished
these parables, he departed
thence.

Matt. viii. 18—22.

¹³ Now when Jesus saw
great multitudes about him,

Mark iv. 35.

³⁵ And
the same day,
when the even was come,

he gave commandment
to depart unto the other
side*.

he saith unto them,
Let us pass over unto the
other side.

¹⁹ And

a certain scribe came, and said
unto him, Master, I will follow
thee whithersoever thou goest.

²⁰ And Jesus saith unto him,
The foxes have holes, and the
birds of the air *have* nests;
but the Son of man hath not
where to lay *his* head.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 267.

TREATMENT OF DIFFERENT FOLLOWERS

Luke viii. 22.

²² Now it came to pass on
a certain day,

that he went into a ship with
his disciples :

and he said unto them,
Let us go over unto the other
side of the lake.

Luke ix. 57—62.

⁵⁷ And it came to pass, that
as they went in the way,
a certain *man* said
unto him, Lord, I will follow
thee whithersoever thou goest.

⁵⁸ And Jesus said unto him,
Foxes have holes, and
birds of the air *have* nests;
but the Son of man hath not
where to lay *his* head.

Matt. viii. 18—22.

²¹ And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father.

²² But Jesus said unto him, Follow me: and let the dead bury their dead.

SECTION XVII

Matt. viii. 23—27.

²³ And when

he was entered into a ship,
his disciples followed him*.

Mark iv. 36—41.

³⁶ And when they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he was in the ship.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 273.

Luke ix. 57—62.

⁵⁹And he said unto another,
Follow me. But he said,

Lord,
suffer me first to go and bury
my father.

⁶⁰Jesus said unto him,
Let the dead

bury their dead;
but go thou and preach the
kingdom of God.

⁶¹And another also said*,
Lord, I will follow thee: but
let me first go bid them fare-
well which are at home at my
house.

⁶²And Jesus said unto him,
No man having put his hand
to the plough, and looking
back, is fit for the kingdom
of God.

THE TEMPEST STILLED ON THE LAKE

Luke viii. 22—25.

²²And they launched forth.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 268.

Matt. viii. 23—27.

²⁴And, behold, there arose
a great tempest in the sea,
insomuch that the ship was
covered with the waves :

but he was asleep.

²⁵And his disciples came
to *him*, and awoke him,
saying, Lord,

save us :

we perish.

²⁶And he saith unto them,
Why are ye fearful, O ye
of little faith ?

Then he arose, and re-
buked the winds and the sea;
and there was a great calm.

²⁷ But the men

marvelled,

saying,

What manner of man is
this, that
even the winds and the sea

obey him !

Mark iv. 36—41.

And there were also with him
other little ships.

³⁷And there arose
a great storm of wind, and
the waves beat into the ship,
so that it was now full.

³⁸And he was in the hinder
part of the ship, asleep on
a pillow :

and they awake him,
and say unto him, Master,

carest thou not that

we perish ?

³⁹And he arose, and rebuked
the winds, and said unto the
sea,

Peace, be still.

And the wind ceased,
and there was a great calm.

⁴⁰And he said unto them,
Why are ye so fearful ? how
is it that ye have no faith ?

⁴¹And they
feared exceedingly, and

said one to another,

What manner of man is
this, that
even the wind and the sea

obey him ?

Luke viii. 22—25.

²³ But as they sailed,
he fell asleep.

And there came down
a storm of wind on the lake;

and they were filled *with water*,
and were in jeopardy.

²⁴ And they came
to him, and awoke him,
saying, Master, master,

we perish.

Then he arose, and re-
buked the wind and the
raging of the water:

and they ceased,
and there was a calm.

²⁵ And he said unto them,
Where is
your faith?

And they
being afraid,
wondered,
saying one to another,

What manner of man is
this? for he commandeth
even the winds and *water*,
and they
obey him.

SECTION XVIII

Matt. viii. 28—34.

²⁸ And when he was come
to the other side, into the
country of the Gergesenes,

there met him

two * possessed with devils,

coming out of the tombs,
exceeding fierce, so that no
man might pass by that way.

Mark v. 1—20.

¹ And they came over unto
the other side of the sea, into
the country of the Gadarenes.

² And when he was come
out of the ship immediately
there met him
out of the tombs

a man with an unclean spirit,

³ Who had *his* dwelling
among the tombs :

and no man could bind him,
no, not with chains :

⁴ Because that he had been
often

bound with fetters and chains,
and the chains had been
plucked asunder by him, and
the fetters broken in pieces :
neither could any *man* tame
him.

⁵ And always, night and day,
he was in the mountains, and
in the tombs, crying, and cut-

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 277, 278.

THE DEMONIACS AMONG THE GADARENES

Luke viii. 26—39.

²⁶And they arrived at

the country of the Gadarenes,
which is over against Galilee.

²⁷And when he went forth
to land,

there met him
out of the city

a certain man which had devils
long time, and ware no clothes,
neither abode in *any* house,
but in the tombs.

²⁹ For

oftentimes
it had caught him : and he
was kept
bound with chains, and in fet-
ters ; and

he brake the bands,

and was driven of the devil
into the wilderness.

Matt. viii. 28—34.

²⁹And behold, they cried out,

saying,

What have we to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God? art thou come hither to torment us before the time?

³⁰And there was a good way off from them an herd of many swine feeding.

³¹So the devils besought him, saying, If thou cast us out, suffer us to go away into the herd of swine.

³²And he said unto them, Go.

Mark v. 1—20.

ting himself with stones.

⁶But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran

and

worshipped him.

⁷And cried with a loud voice, and

said,

What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the most high God?

I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me not.

⁸For he said unto him, Come out of the man, *thou* unclean spirit.

⁹And he asked him,

What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name *is* Legion: for we are many.

¹⁰And he besought him much, that he would not send them away out of the country.

¹¹Now there was there, nigh unto the mountains, a great herd of swine feeding.

¹²And all the devils besought him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.

¹³And forthwith Jesus gave them leave.

Luke viii. 26—39.

²⁸ When he saw Jesus,

he cried out, and fell down
before him,

and with a loud
voice
said,

What have I to do with
thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of God
most high?

I beseech thee
torment me not.

²⁹ For he had commanded
the unclean spirit to come
out of the man.

³⁰ And Jesus asked him,
saying,

What is thy name? And
he said,

Legion : because many devils
were entered into him.

³¹ And they besought him,
that he would not command
them to go out into the deep.

³² And there was there

an herd of many swine feeding
on the mountain :

and they besought
him that he would suffer them
to enter into
them.

And he suffered them.

Matt. viii. 28—34.

And when they were come out,
they went into the herd of swine: and, behold,
the whole herd of swine ran violently down a steep place into the sea,

and perished in the waters.

³³And they that kept them fled,

and went their ways into the city,

and told every thing; and what was befallen to the possessed of the devils.

³⁴And, behold,

the whole city came out to meet Jesus: and when they saw him, they besought *him* that he would depart out of

Mark v. 1—20.

And the unclean spirits went out,
and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand,) and were choked in the sea.

¹⁴And they that fed the swine fled,

and told *it* in the city, and in the country.

And they went out to see what it was that was done.

¹⁵And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

¹⁶And they that saw *it*, told them how it befel to him that was possessed with the devil, and *also* concerning the swine.

¹⁷And they began to pray him to depart out of

Luke viii. 26—39.

³³ Then went the devils out
of the man,
and entered into the
swine : and
the herd
ran violently down a steep
place into the lake,

and were choked.

³⁴ When they that fed *them*
saw what was done, they fled,
and went
and told *it* in the city
and in the country.

³⁵ Then they went out to see
what was done;

and came to Jesus,
and found the man, out of
whom the devils were departed,
sitting at the feet of Jesus,
clothed, and in his right
mind : and they were afraid.

³⁶ They also which saw *it*,
told them by what means
he that was possessed of the
devil was healed.

³⁷ Then the whole multitude
of the country of the Gada-
renes round about,

besought him
to depart

Matt. viii. 28—34.
their coasts.

Mark v. 1—20.
their coasts.

¹⁸ And when
he was come into the ship,

he that had been possessed
with the devil
prayed him that he might be
with him.

¹⁹ Howbeit, Jesus suffered
him not,

but saith unto him,
Go home to thy friends, and
tell them how great things
the Lord hath done for thee,
and hath had compassion on
thee.

²⁰ And he departed, and
began to publish in Decapolis
how great things Jesus had
done for him: and all *men* did
marvel.

SECTION XIX

Matt. ix. 1.
¹ And he entered into a
ship, and passed over, and
came into his own city.

Mark v. 21.

²¹ And when Jesus was

Luke viii. 26—39.

from them :

for they were taken with great fear.

And he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

³⁸ Now the man, out of whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might be with him.

But Jesus sent him away,

saying,

³⁹ Return to thine own house, and show how great things God hath done unto thee.

And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done unto him.

*THE FEAST AT THE HOUSE OF LEVI **

Luke viii. 40.

⁴⁰ And it came to pass that

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 287, 288.

Mark v. 21.

passed over again by ship
unto the other side, much
people gathered unto him :

Matt. ix. 10—17.

¹⁰ And it came to pass,
as Jesus sat at meat in the
house,

behold,

many publicans
and sinners came, and sat
down with him and his
disciples.

¹¹ And when the
Pharisees saw *it*,

they said unto his
disciples,

Why

eateth your Master with pub-
licans and sinners ?

¹² But when Jesus heard
that, he said unto them, They
that be whole need not a
physician, but they that are
sick.

¹³ But go ye and learn what
that meaneth, I will have
mercy, and not sacrifice :
for I am not come to call
the righteous, but sinners to

Mark ii. 15—22.

¹⁵ And it came to pass,
that as Jesus sat at meat in his
house,

many publicans

and sinners sat also
together with Jesus and his
disciples ; for there were
many, and they followed him.

¹⁶ And when the scribes and
Pharisees saw him eat with
publicans and sinners,

they said unto his
disciples,

How is it that he

eateth and drinketh with pub-
licans and sinners ?

¹⁷ When Jesus heard
it, he saith unto them, They
that are whole have no need
of the physician, but they that
are sick :

I came not to call
the righteous, but sinners to

Luke viii. 40.

when Jesus was returned, the

people

gladly received him, for they
were all waiting for him.

Luke v. 29—39.

²⁹ And Levi made him a
great feast

in his own
house :

and there was a
great company of publicans,
and of others that sat
down with
them.

³⁰ But their scribes and
Pharisees

murmured against his
disciples, saying,

Why
do ye
eat and drink with publicans
and sinners ?

³¹ And Jesus answering,
said unto them, They
that are whole need not a
physician : but they that are
sick.

³² I came not to call
the righteous, but sinners to

Matt. ix. 10—17.

repentance.

¹⁴Then came to him the
disciples of John, saying,
Why do we
and
the Pharisees fast oft,

but thy disciples fast not?

¹⁵And Jesus said unto them,
Can the children of the
bridechamber mourn, as long
as the bridegroom is with
them?

but the days will come,
when the bridegroom shall be
taken from them, and then
shall they fast.

¹⁶No man putteth a piece
of new cloth unto an old garment: for that which is put
in to fill it up, taketh from
the garment,

and the rent is made worse.

¹⁷Neither do men put new

Mark ii. 15—22.

repentance.

¹⁸And the disciples of John
and of the Pharisees used to
fast:

and they come
and say unto him,
Why do the disciples of John
and of
the Pharisees fast,

but thy disciples fast not?

¹⁹And Jesus said unto them,
Can the children of the
bridechamber fast, while
the bridegroom is with
them?

as long as they have the
bridegroom with them, they
cannot fast.

²⁰But the days will come,
when the bridegroom shall be
taken away from them, and
then shall they fast
in those days.

²¹No man also seweth a piece
of new cloth on an old garment: else the new piece that
filled it up, taketh away from
the old,

and the rent is made worse.

²²And no man putteth new

Luke v. 29—39.

repentance.

³³ And they
said unto him,
Why do the disciples of John
fast often, and make prayers,
and likewise *the disciples* of
the Pharisees,

but thine
eat and drink ?

³⁴ And he said unto them,
Can ye make the children of
the bridechamber fast, while
the bridegroom is with
them ?

³⁵ But the days will come,
when the bridegroom shall be
taken away from them, and
then shall they fast
in those days.

³⁶ And he spake also a para-
ble unto them,

No man putteth a piece
of a new garment upon an old :
if otherwise, then both
the new maketh a rent,

and the piece that was *taken*
out of the new, agreeth not
with the old.

³⁷ And no man putteth new

Matt. ix. 10—17.

wine into old bottles: else
the bottles break, and the
wine runneth out, and the
bottles perish:

but they put new wine
into new bottles, and both are
preserved.

Mark ii. 15—22.

wine into old bottles; else
the new wine doth

burst the bottles, and the
wine is spilled, and the

bottles will be marred:
but new wine must be put
into new bottles.

SECTION XX

Matt. ix. 18—26.

¹⁸ While he spake these
things unto them,

behold, there came
a certain ruler,

and worshipped

him, saying,

My daughter

Mark v. 22—43.

²² And, behold, there cometh
one of the rulers
of the synagogue,

Jairus by name;
and when he saw him, he
fell at his feet,

²³ And besought
him greatly, saying,

My little daughter

Luke v. 29—39.

wine into old bottles; else
the new wine will

burst the bottles, and be
spilled, and the
bottles shall perish.

³⁸ But new wine must be put
into new bottles; and both are
preserved.

³⁹ No man also having drunk
old *wine*, straightway desireth
new: for he saith, The old is
better.

THE RAISING OF JAIRUS'S DAUGHTER

Luke viii. 41—56.

⁴¹ And, behold, there came
a man, named Jairus, and he
was a ruler of the synagogue:

and he
fell down at Jesus' feet,

and besought
him that he would come into
his house,

⁴² For he had
one only daughter,
about twelve years of age,

Matt. ix. 18—26.

is even now dead *:

but come and lay
thy hand upon her,
and she shall
live.

¹⁹ And Jesus arose
and followed him,
and *so did* his disciples.

²⁰ And, behold, a woman,
which was diseased with an
issue of blood twelve years,

came
behind *him*, and touched the
hem of his garment:

²¹ For she said
within herself,
If I may but touch his
garment, I shall be whole.

Mark v. 22—43.

lieth at the point of death:
I pray thee, come and lay
thy hands on her, that she
may be healed; and she shall
live.

²⁴ And *Jesus*
went with him;

and much people followed
him, and thronged him.

²⁵ And a certain woman,
which had an
issue of blood twelve years,

²⁶ And had suffered many
things of many physicians,
and had spent all that she
had,

and was nothing bettered, but
rather grew worse,

²⁷ When she had heard of
Jesus, came in the press
behind, and touched
his garment.

²⁸ For she said,
If I may touch but his
clothes, I shall be whole.

²⁹ And straightway the
fountain of her blood was
dried up;
and she felt in *her* body that
she was healed of that plague.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 298.

Luke viii. 41—56.
and she lay a dying.

But as he went
the people
thronged him.

⁴³ And a woman
having an
issue of blood twelve years,

which had spent all her
living upon physicians,

neither could be healed of
any,

⁴⁵ Came
behind *him*, and touched the
border of his garment :

and immediately
her issue of blood
stanchèd.

Matt. ix. 18—26.

Mark v. 22—43.

³⁰ And Jesus immediately
knowing in himself that virtue
had gone out of him, turned
him about in the press,
and said,
Who touched my clothes ?

³¹ And his disciples
said unto him, Thou seest the
multitude thronging thee,
and sayest thou,
Who touched me ?

³² And he looked round
about to see her that had
done this thing.

³³ But the woman

fearing and trembling,
knowing what was done in
her, came, and fell down
before him, and told
him

all the truth

²² But Jesus turned him
about, and when he saw her,
he said,
Daughter, be of good com-
fort, thy faith hath made thee
whole.
And the woman was made

³⁴ And he said unto her,
Daughter,
thy faith hath made thee
whole ; go in peace, and be
whole of thy plague.

Luke viii. 41—56.

⁴⁵ And Jesus said,
Who touched me?

When all denied,
Peter and they that were with
him, said, Master, the
multitude throng thee, and
press *thee*, and sayest thou,
Who touched me?

⁴⁶ And Jesus said, Some-
body hath touched me: for
I perceive that virtue is gone
out of me.

⁴⁷ And when the woman
saw that she was not hid,
she came,

trembling,
and, falling down
before him, she declared unto
him before all the people for
what cause she had touched
him, and how she was healed
immediately.

⁴⁸ And he said unto her,
Daughter, be of good com-
fort; thy faith hath made
thee whole; go in peace

Matt. ix. 18—26.
whole from that hour.

Mark v. 22—43.

³⁵ While he yet spake, there came from the ruler of the synagogue's *house certain* which said, Thy daughter is dead; why troublest thou the Master any further?

³⁶ As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken, he saith

unto the ruler of the synagogue, Be not afraid, only believe.

²³ And when Jesus came into the ruler's house,

³⁷ And he suffered no man to follow him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.

and saw the minstrels, and the people making a

noise,

³⁸ And he cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed

greatly.

²⁴ He said unto them, Give place,

³⁹ And when he was come in, he saith unto them,

for the maid is not dead, but sleepeth.

Why make ye this ado and weep? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

And they laughed him to scorn.

⁴⁰ And they laughed him to scorn.

²⁵ But when the people were put forth,

But when he had put them all out,

he taketh the father and

Luke viii. 41—56.

⁴⁹ While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, *Thy daughter is dead: trouble not the Master.*

⁵⁰ But when Jesus heard it, he answered him,

saying,
Fear not:
believe only, and she shall be made whole.

⁵¹ And when he came into the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the father and the mother of the maiden.

⁵² And all wept, and bewailed her:

but he
said,

Weep not; she is not dead, but sleepeth.

⁵³ And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

⁵⁴ And he put them all out,

Matt. ix. 18—26.

he went in,
and took her
by the hand,

and the
maid arose.

²⁶And the fame hereof went
abroad into all that land.

Mark v. 22—43.

the mother of the damsel, and
them that were with him,
and entereth in where the
damsel was lying.

⁴¹And he took the damsel
by the hand, and said unto
her, *Talitha cumi*; which is,
being interpreted, Damsel, I
say unto thee, arise.

⁴²And straightway the
damsel arose,
and walked: for
she was *of the age* of twelve
years.

And they were
astonished
with a great astonishment.

⁴³And he charged them
straitly that no man should
know it; and commanded
that something should be
given her to eat.

Luke viii. 41—56.

and took her
by the hand, and called,
saying,

Maid,
arise.

⁵⁵ And her spirit came
again,

and she arose
straightway :

and he commanded
to give her meat.

⁵⁶ And her parents were
astonished :

but he charged them
that they should tell no man
what was done.

SECTION XXI

TWO BLIND MEN HEALED, AND A DUMB SPIRIT CAST OUT

Matt. ix. 27—34.

²⁷ And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men * followed him, crying, and saying, *Thou Son of David*, have mercy on us. ²⁸ And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They said unto him, Yea, Lord. ²⁹ Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you. ³⁰ And their eyes were opened; and Jesus straitly charged them, saying, See

that no man know it. ³¹ But they, when they were departed, spread abroad his fame in all that country.

³² And as they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. ³³ And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. ³⁴ But the Pharisees said, He casteth out devils through the prince of the devils.

SECTION XXII

THE RETURN TO NAZARETH

Matt. xiii. 54—58.

⁵⁴ And when he was come into his own country,

Mark vi. 1—6.

¹ And he went out from thence, and came into his own country; and his disciples follow him.

² And when the sabbath-day

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 308.

Matt. xiii. 54—58.

he taught them
in their synagogue,
insomuch that they were
astonished, and said,

Whence hath this *man*
this wisdom,

and *these* mighty
works ?

⁵⁵ Is not this the carpenter's
son ?

is not his mother
called Mary ?
and his brethren, James, and
Josés, and Simon, and Judas ?

⁵⁶ And his sisters, are they
not all with us ?

Whence then hath this *man*
all these things ?

⁵⁷ And they were offended
in him.

But Jesus said unto them,
A prophet is not without
honour, save in his own coun-
try,

and in his own house.

⁵⁸ And he did
not many mighty works there,

because of their unbelief.

Mark vi. 1—6.

was come, he began to teach
in the synagogue ;
and many hearing *him* were
astonished, saying,
From whence hath this *man*
these things ? and what wis-
dom *is* this which is given unto
him, that even such mighty
works are wrought by his
hands ?

³ Is not this the carpenter,

the son of Mary,
the brother of James, and
Josés, and of Juda, and Simon ?
and are not his sisters here
with us ?

And they were
offended at him.

⁴ But Jesus said unto them,
A prophet is not without
honour, but in his own coun-
try,

and among his own kin,
and in his own house.

⁵ And he could there do no
mighty work,
save that he laid his hand
upon a few sick folk, and
healed *them*.

⁶ And he marvelled because
of their unbelief.

PART VI

The Twelve sent Forth

SECTION I

Matt. ix. 35—x. 15.

AND Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing every sickness, and every disease among the people.

³⁶ But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. ³⁷ Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest truly *is* plenteous, but the labourers *are* few; ³⁸ pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

¹ And when he had called unto *him* his twelve disciples, he gave them power *against*

Mark vi. 6—11.

⁶ And he went round about the villages, teaching*.

⁷ And he called unto *him* the twelve, and began to send

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 315, 316.

APOSTLES INSTRUCTED FOR THEIR MISSION

Luke ix. 1—5.

¹ Then he called
his twelve disciples together,
and gave them power and

Matt. ix. 35—x. 15.

unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.

⁵ These twelve Jesus sent forth,

and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not :

⁶ but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

⁷ And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. ⁸ Heal the sick,

cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils : freely ye have received, freely give.

⁹ Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses,

¹⁰ nor scrip for *your* journey, neither two coats, neither shoes,

nor yet staves : for the workman is worthy of his meat.

¹¹ And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy ;

and there abide till ye go thence.

¹² And when ye come into an house, salute it. ¹³ And if the house be worthy, let your peace

Mark vi. 6—11.

them forth

by two and two ;

and gave them power over unclean spirits ;

⁸ And commanded them that they should take nothing for *their* journey,

save a staff only ;

no scrip, no bread,

no money in *their* purse :

⁹ But *be* shod with sandals ; and not put on two coats.

¹⁰ And he said unto them, In what place soever ye enter into an house,

there abide till ye depart from that place.

Luke ix. 1—5.

authority over all devils,
and to cure

diseases.

² And he sent
them,

to preach
the kingdom of God,
and to heal the sick.

³ And he said unto them,
Take nothing
for *your* journey,
neither staves,
nor scrip, neither bread,
neither money ;

neither have two coats apiece.

⁴ And whatsoever house ye
enter into,

there abide, and thence depart.

Matt. ix. 35—x. 15.

come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

¹⁴ And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet.

¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

Mark vi. 6—11.

¹¹ And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear you, when ye depart thence,

shake off
the dust under your feet
for a testimony against them.

Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgment, than for that city.

SECTION II

Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.

¹⁶ Behold I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. ¹⁷ But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in the synagogues; ¹⁸ and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. ¹⁹ But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given

you in that same hour what ye shall speak. ²⁰ For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you.

²¹ And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child: and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and causethem to be put to death.

²² And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved.

²³ But when they persecute

Luke ix. 1—5.

⁵ And whosoever will not receive you,
when ye go out of that city,
shake off
the very dust from your feet
for a testimony against them.

FURTHER INSTRUCTION OF APOSTLES

Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.

you in this city, flee ye into another, for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

²⁴ The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord. ²⁵ It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household?

²⁶ Fear them not therefore :

for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. ²⁷ What I tell you in darkness, *that* speak ye in light: and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach ye upon the house-tops. ²⁸ And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. ²⁹ Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and one of them shall not fall on the ground

Matt. x. 16—42; xi. 1.

without your Father. ³⁰ But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. ³¹ Fear ye not therefore, ye are of more value than many sparrows.

³² Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven.

³³ But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

³⁴ Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. ³⁵ For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law. ³⁶ And a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household. ³⁷ He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy of me: and

he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is not worthy of me. ³⁸ And he that taketh not his cross, and followeth after me, is not worthy of me. ³⁹ He that findeth his life, shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall find it.

⁴⁰ He that receiveth you, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. ⁴¹ He that receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward; and he that receiveth a righteous man in the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's reward. ⁴² And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold *water* only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

Matt. xi. 1.

¹ And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence to teach and to preach in their cities.

Mark vi. 12, 13.

¹² And they went out, and

Luke ix. 6.

⁶ And they departed, and

Mark vi. 12, 13.

preached

that men should repent.

¹³ And they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were sick, and healed *them*.

SECTION III

Matt. xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.

¹ At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus,

Mark vi. 14—16. 21—29.

¹⁴ And king Herod heard

of him ;

for his name was spread abroad :

² And said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead: and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

and he said,

That

John the Baptist was risen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth themselves in him.

¹⁵ Others said,

That it is Elias.

And others said, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

¹⁶ But when Herod heard *thereof*,

Luke ix. 6.

went through the towns,
preaching the gospel,

and healing every where.

HEROD HEARS OF CHRIST

Luke ix. 7—9.

⁷ Now Herod the
tetrarch heard of all that was
done by him :

and he was perplexed, because
that it was said of some, that
John was risen from the dead ;

⁸ And of some,
that Elias had appeared ;
and of others, that one of the
old prophets was risen again.

Matt. xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.*Mark* vi. 14—16. 21—29.

he said, It is John,
whom I beheaded:

he is risen from the dead.

But when
Herod's
birthday was kept,
the daughter
of Herodias
danced before them
and pleased Herod.

⁷ Whereupon he promised
withan oath, to give her what-
soever she would ask.

⁸ And she,
being before instructed of her
mother, said,

Give
me here John Baptist's head

²¹ And when a convenient
day was come*, that Herod on
his birthday made a supper to
his lords, high captains, and
chief *estates* of Galilee;

²² And when the daughter
of the said Herodias came in,
and danced,

and pleased Herod
and them that sat with him,
the king said unto the damsel,
Ask of me whatsoever thou
wilt, and I will give *it* thee.

²³ And he sware unto her,
Whatsoever thou shalt ask of
me, I will give *it* thee, unto
the half of my kingdom.

²⁴ And she went forth and
said unto her mother, What
shall I ask? and she said,
The head of John the Baptist.

²⁵ And she

came in straightway with
haste unto the king, and asked,
saying, I will that thou give
me by and by in a charger the

* Continued from Pt. iii. § iv.; see Ministry, 2nd Year, p. 336.

Luke ix. 7—9.

⁹And Herod said, John
have I beheaded: but who is
this, of whom I hear such
things?

and he desired to see him.

Matt. xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.
in a charger.

⁹And the king was
sorry;
nevertheless for the oath's
sake, and them
which sat with him at meat, he
commanded *it* to be given *her*.

¹⁰And he
sent,

and

Mark vi. 14—16. 21—29.
head of John the Baptist.

²⁶And the king was exceed-
ing sorry;

yet for his oath's
sake, and for their sakes
which sat with him, he
would not reject her.

²⁷And immediately the king
sent an executioner, and com-
manded his head to be
brought: and he went and

SECTION IV

Matt. xiv. 13, 14.

Mark vi. 30—34.

³⁰And the apostles

gathered themselves together
unto Jesus, and told him all
things, both what they had
done, and what they had
taught. ³¹And he said unto
them, Come ye yourselves
apart into a desert place, and
rest awhile: for there were
many coming and going, and
they had no leisure so much
as to eat.

¹³When Jesus heard *of it*,
he departed *

³²And they departed

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 340, 341.

Matt. xiv. 1, 2. 6—12.

beheaded John in the prison.

¹¹And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel: and she brought *it* to her mother.

¹²And his disciples came, and took up the body, and buried it, and went and told Jesus.

Mark vi. 14—16. 21—29.

beheaded him in the prison,

²⁸And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel: and the damsel gave it to her mother.

²⁹And when his disciples heard *of it*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in a tomb.

CHRIST RETIRES WITH THE TWELVE

Luke ix. 10, 11.

¹⁰And the apostles, when they were returned,

told him all
that they had

done.

John vi. 1—5.

¹After these things

And he
took them, and went aside Jesus went

Matt. xiv. 13, 14.

thence by ship into a
desert place apart:

Mark vi. 30—34.

into a
desert place by ship privately.

and when the people
had heard *thereof*,

they followed him on foot out
of the cities.

³³ And the people saw
them departing,

and many knew him,
and ran afoot thither out
of all cities, and outwent them,
and came together unto him.

¹⁴ And Jesus
went forth,

and saw a great multitude,

and was moved with com-
passion toward them,

and he healed
their sick.

³⁴ And Jesus
when he came out,

saw much people,

and was moved with compas-
sion toward them,
because they were as sheep
not having a shepherd:

and he began to teach them
many things.

Luke ix. 10, 11.

John vi. 1—5.

privately

into a desert place,
belonging to the city called
Bethsaida.

¹¹And the people,
when they knew *it*,

followed him :

over the sea of Galilee,
which is *the sea* of Tiberias.

²And a great multitude

followed him,

because they saw his miracles
which he did on them that
were diseased.

³And Jesus went up into a
mountain, and there he sat
with his disciples.

⁴And the passover, a feast
of the Jews, was nigh.

⁵When Jesus

then lifted up *his* eyes,
and saw a great company
come unto him.

and he received them,

and spake unto them of the
kingdom of God, and healed
them that had need of healing.

SECTION V

Matt. xiv. 15—21.

¹⁵And when it was
evening,
his disciples came to him,
saying,

This is a desert place, and the
time is now past;
send the multitude away, that
they may go into
the villages,

and buy themselves victuals.

¹⁶But Jesus
said unto them,
They need not depart;
give ye them to eat.

Mark vi. 35—44.

³⁵And when the day was
now far spent,
his disciples came unto him,
and said,

This is a desert place, and now
the time *is* far passed:

³⁶Send them away, that
they may go into
the country round about, and
into the villages,

and buy themselves bread:
for they have nothing to eat.

³⁷He answered and
said unto them,

Give ye them to eat.
And they say unto him, Shall
we go and buy

two hundred pennyworth of
bread, and give them to eat?

³⁸He saith unto them, How
many loaves have ye? go and
see*.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 347, 348.

THE FIRST MIRACLE OF THE LOAVES*Luke ix. 12—17.**John vi. 5—14.*

¹² And when the day began
to wear away, then came the
twelve,
and said
unto him,

Send the multitude away, that
they may go into the towns
and country round about,

and lodge,
and get victuals: for
we are here in a desert place.

¹³ But he
said unto them,

Give ye them to eat.
And they said,

⁵ he saith unto Philip,
Whence shall we buy bread,
that these may eat?

⁶ And this he said to prove
him: for he himself knew what
he would do.

⁷ Philip answered him, Two
hundred pennyworth of bread

*Matt. xiv. 15—21.**Mark vi. 35—44.*

¹⁷ And they say unto him,
We have here but five
loaves, and two fishes.

And when they knew, they say,
Five,
and two fishes.

¹⁸ He said, Bring them hither
to me.

¹⁹ And he commanded
the multitude to sit down

³⁹ And he commanded them
to make all sit down

on the grass,

by companies
upon the green grass.

and took the five loaves, and
the two fishes, and looking up
to heaven, he blessed,

⁴⁰ And they sat down in
ranks, by hundreds, and by
fifties.

⁴¹ And when he had
taken the five loaves and
the two fishes, he looked up
to heaven, and blessed,

and brake,
and gave the loaves to *his*
disciples,

and brake the loaves,
and gave *them* to his
disciples
to set before them ;

and the disciples to the mul-
titude.

and the two fishes divided
he among them all.

²⁰ And they did all eat, and

⁴² And they did all eat, and

Luke ix. 12--17.

We have no more but five loaves and two fishes; except we should go and buy meat for all this people. For they were about five thousand men.

¹⁴ And he said to his disciples, Make them sit down by fifties in a company.

¹⁵ And they did so, and made them all sit down.

¹⁶ Then he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them,

and brake,

and gave to the disciples
to set before the multitude.

¹⁷ And they did eat, and

John vi. 5--14.

is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.

⁸ One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,

⁹ There is a lad

here, which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?

¹⁰ And Jesus said, make the men sit down.

Now there was much grass in the place.

¹⁰ So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

¹¹ And Jesus took the loaves,

and when he had given thanks,

he distributed to the disciples,

and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.

¹² When they

Matt. xiv. 15—21.
were filled:

Mark vi. 35—44.
were filled.

And they took up of the
fragments that remained
twelve baskets full.

⁴³ And they took up twelve
baskets full of the fragments,

²¹ And they that had eaten
were about five thousand men,
beside women and children.

and of the fishes.
⁴⁴ And they that did eat
of the loaves
were about five thousand men.

SECTION VI

Matt. xiv. 22, 23.
²² And straightway Jesus
constrained his disciples to get
into a ship, and to go before
him
unto the other side,
while he sent the multitudes
away.

Mark vi. 45, 46.
⁴⁵ And straightway he
constrained his disciples to get
into the ship, and to go
to the other side before
unto Bethsaida,
while he sent away the people.

Luke ix. 12—17.

were all filled :

and there was taken up of
fragments that remained to
them twelve baskets.

John vi. 5—14.

were filled,

he said unto his disciples,
Gather up the fragments that
remain, that nothing be lost.

¹³Therefore they gathered
them together and filled
twelve baskets
with the fragments of the five
barley loaves, which remained
over and above unto them
that had eaten.

¹⁴Then those men, when
they had seen the miracle
that Jesus did, said, This is of
a truth that prophet that
should come into the world.

CHRIST AGAIN RETIRES TO THE MOUNTAIN

Matt. xiv. 22, 23.

²³ And when he had sent
the multitude away,

Mark vi. 45, 46.

⁴⁶ And when he had sent
them away,

he went up into a moun-
tain
apart to pray:
and when the evening was
come*, he was there alone.

he departed into a moun-
tain
to pray.

SECTION VII

Matt. xiv. 24—33.

Mark vi. 47—52.

⁴⁷ And when even was
come,

the ship was in the midst of
the sea, and he alone on the
land.

⁴⁸ And he saw them toiling
²⁴ But the ship was now in in rowing;

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 368, 369.

John vi. 15.

¹⁵When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.

*CHRIST WALKS UPON THE SEA**John vi. 16—21.*

¹⁶And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea,

¹⁷And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum*. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.

¹⁸And the sea arose by reason of a great wind that blew.

* See Ministry, 2nd Year, pp. 370, 371.

Matt. xiv. 24—33.

the midst of the sea, tossed with waves : for the wind was contrary.

²⁵ And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.

²⁶ And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea,

they were troubled, saying,

It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear.

²⁷ But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying,

Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.

²⁸ And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water.

²⁹ And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.

³⁰ But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink,

Mark vi. 47—52.

for the wind was contrary unto them :

and about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea, and would have passed by them.

⁴⁹ But when they saw him walking upon the sea,

they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out :

⁵⁰ For they all saw him, and were troubled.

And immediately he talked with them, and saith unto them,
Be of good cheer : it is I; be not afraid.

· *John vi. 16—21.*

¹⁹ So when they had rowed
about five and twenty or thirty
furlongs,

they
see Jesus walking on the sea,
and drawing nigh unto the
ship:

and they were afraid.

saith
unto them,
not afraid.

²⁰ But he

It is I; be

Matt. xiv. 24—33.

he cried, saying, Lord, save me.

³¹ And immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

³² And when they were come

into the ship;
the wind ceased.

³³ Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

Mark vi. 47—52.

⁵¹ And he went up unto them

into the ship;
and the wind ceased:

and they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure, and wondered.

⁵² For they considered not *the miracle* of the loaves: for their heart was hardened.

SECTION VIII

Matt. xiv. 34—36.

³⁴ And when they were gone over, they came into the land of Gennesaret.

³⁵ And when

Mark vi. 53—56.

⁵³ And when they had passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret, and drew to the shore.

⁵⁴ And when

John vi. 16—21.

²¹ Then they willingly
received him into the ship:

and immediately the ship was
at the land whither they went.

PEOPLE HEALED AT GENNESARET

Matt. xiv. 34—36.

the men of that place had
knowledge of him,
they sent out into

Mark vi. 53—56.

they were come out of the
ship, straightway they

knew him,

⁵⁵ And ran through

Matt. xiv. 34—36.

all that country round about,
and brought unto him all that
were diseased;

³⁶ And besought him that
they might only touch

the hem of his garment :
and as many as touched
were made perfectly whole.

Mark vi. 53—56.

that whole region round about,
and began to carry about in
beds those that were sick,
where they heard he was.

⁵⁶ And whithersoever he en-
tered, into villages, or cities,
or country, they laid the sick
in the streets,

and besought him that
they might touch

if it were but
the border of his garment :
and as many as touched him
were made whole.

SECTION IX

CHRIST FOUND AT CAPERNAUM

John vi. 22—26.

²² The day following, when
the people which stood on the
other side of the sea, saw
that there was none other boat
there, save that one whereinto
his disciples were entered, and
that Jesus went not with his
disciples into the boat, but *that*
his disciples were gone away
alone ; ²³ (howbeit there came
other boats from Tiberias, nigh
unto the place where they did
eat bread, after that the Lord
had given thanks :) ²⁴ when
the people therefore saw that

Jesus was not there, neither
his disciples, they also took
shipping, and came to Ca-
pernaum, seeking for Jesus.

²⁵ And when they had found
him on the other side of the
sea, they said unto him, Rab-
bi, when camest thou hither?

²⁶ Jesus answered them and
said, Verily, verily, I say unto
you, Ye seek me, not because
ye saw the miracles, but be-
cause ye did eat of the loaves,
and were filled.

SECTION X

THE INCARNATION

John vi. 27—40.

²⁷ Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed.

²⁸ Then said they unto him, What shall we do that we might work the works of God? ²⁹ Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.

³⁰ They said therefore unto him, What sign shewest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work? ³¹ Our fathers did eat manna in the desert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat. ³² Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven. ³³ For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the

world. ³⁴ Then said they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. ³⁵ And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life; he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.

³⁶ But I said unto you, That ye also have seen me, and believe not. ³⁷ All that the Father giveth me shall come to me: and him that cometh to me, I will in no wise cast out. ³⁸ For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. ³⁹ And this is the Father's will which hath sent me, That of all which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the last day. ⁴⁰ And this is the will of him that sent me, That every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on him, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day.

SECTION XI

MURMURING OF THE JEWS

John vi. 41—46.

⁴¹ The Jews then murmured at him, because he said, I am the bread which came down from heaven. ⁴² And they said, Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven? ⁴³ Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. ⁴⁴ No man can come to me, except

the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. ⁴⁵ It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. ⁴⁶ Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the father.

SECTION XII

THE HOLY EUCHARIST

John vi. 47—59.

⁴⁷ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. ⁴⁸ I am that bread of life. ⁴⁹ Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead. ⁵⁰ This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. ⁵¹ I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread he shall live for ever; and the bread that I

will give is my flesh, which I will give for the life of the world. ⁵² The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us *his* flesh to eat? ⁵³ Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. ⁵⁴ Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise

John vi. 47—59.

him up at the last day.

⁵⁵ For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

⁵⁶ He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

⁵⁷ As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father, so he that eateth me,

even he shall live by me.

⁵⁸ This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread shall live for ever. ⁵⁹ These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

SECTION XIII

DISCIPLES OFFENDED

John vi. 60—71.

⁶⁰ Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*, said, This is an hard saying, who can hear it? ⁶¹ When

Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said unto them, Doth this offend you? ⁶² *What* and if ye

shall see the Son of man ascend up where he was before?

⁶³ It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life. ⁶⁴ But there are

some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who should betray him. ⁶⁵ And he said, Therefore said I unto you,

that no man can come unto me, except it were given unto him of my Father.

⁶⁶ From that *time* many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him.

⁶⁷ Then said Jesus unto the twelve, Will ye also go away?

⁶⁸ Then Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. ⁶⁹ And we be-

lieve, and are sure, that thou art Christ, the Son of the living God. ⁷⁰ Jesus answered them, Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a

devil? ⁷¹ He spake of Judas Iscariot, *the son* of Simon: for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

PART VII

Teaching in Galilee

THE THIRD YEAR OF OUR LORD'S MINISTRY

SECTION I

Matt. xv. 1.

Mark vii. 1.

THEN came to
Jesus scribes and Phari-
sees, which were
of Jerusalem.

¹ Then came together unto
him the Pharisees, and certain
of the scribes, which came
from Jerusalem.

SECTION II

Mark vii. 2—13.

² And when they saw some
of his disciples eat bread with
defiled, that is to say, with un-
washen, hands, they found
fault. ³ For the Pharisees,
and all the Jews, except they

THE THIRD PASSOVER *

John vii. 1.

¹ After these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill him.

EATING WITH UNWASHEN HANDS

Mark vii. 2—13.

wash *their* hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders.

⁴ And *when they come* from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 1—4, and Study of Gospels, pp. 344—346.

Matt. xv. 2—9.

saying,
²Why do thy disciple transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

³ But he answered and said unto them,——

⁷ Ye hypocrites *, well did Esaias prophesy of you,
 saying,

⁸ This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and

honoureth me with *their* lips; but their heart is far from me.

⁹ But in vain they do worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

⁸ Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God, by

Mark vii. 2—13.

things there be, which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of cups, and pots, brassen vessels, and of tables.

⁵ Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?

⁶ He answered and said unto them,
 Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,

This people

honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart is far from me.

⁷ Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.

⁸ For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, *as* the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do.

⁹ And he said unto them,
 Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 6. 8.

Matt. xv. 2—9.

your tradition ?

⁴ For God commanded,
saying,

Honour thy father and
mother; and he that curseth
father or mother, let him die
the death.

⁵ But ye say, Whosoever
shall say to *his* father or *his*
mother, *It is*

a gift, by whatsoever
thou mightest be profited by
me;

⁶ And honour not his father
or his mother,
he shall be free.

Thus have ye made the com-
mandment of God of none
effect by your tradition.

Mark vii. 2—13.

ye may keep your own tradi-
tion.

¹⁰ For Moses said,
Honour thy father and thy
mother; and, Whoso curseth
father or mother, let him die
the death.

¹¹ But ye say, If a man
shall say to his father or
mother, *It is* Corban, that is to
say, a gift, by whatsoever
thou mightest be profited by
me;

he shall be free.

¹² And ye suffer him no more
to do ought for his father or
his mother;

¹³ Making the word
of God of none
effect through your tradition,
which ye have delivered: and
many such like things do ye.

SECTION III

WHAT DEFILETH THE MAN

Matt. xv. 10—20.

¹⁰ And he called
the multitude*, and

Mark vii. 14—23.

¹⁴ And when he had called
all the people *unto him*, he

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 10—12.

Matt. xv. 10—20.

said unto them, Hear,

and understand :

¹¹ Not that which
goeth into
the mouth defileth a man; but
that which cometh out of
the mouth, this defileth
a man.

¹² Then came his disciples,
and said unto him, Knowest
thou that the Pharisees were
offended, after they heard this
saying? ¹³ But he answered
and said, Every plant, which
my heavenly Father hath not
planted, shall be rooted up.
¹⁴ Let them alone: they be
blind leaders of the blind. And
if the blind lead the blind, both
shall fall into the ditch.

¹⁵ Then answered Peter, and
said unto him,

Declare unto us this parable.

¹⁶ And Jesus said,
Are ye also yet without
understanding ?

¹⁷ Do not ye yet understand,
that whatsoever
entereth in at the mouth

Mark vii. 14—23.

said unto them, Hearken unto
me every one of you,
and understand :

¹⁵ There is nothing from with-
out a man, that entering into
him can defile him: but
the things which come out of
him, those are they that defile
the man.

¹⁶ If any man have ears to
hear, let him hear.

¹⁷ And when he was entered
into the house from the people,

his disciples asked him
concerning the parable.

¹⁸ And he saith unto them,
Are ye so without
understanding also ?

Do ye not perceive,
that whatsoever thing from
without entereth into the man,
it cannot defile him;

¹⁹ Because it entereth not

Matt. xv. 10—20.

goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

¹⁸ But those things which proceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart; and they defile the man.

¹⁹ For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications,

thefts,
false witness,
blasphemies:

²⁰ These are *the things* which defile a man: but to eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man

Mark vii. 14—23.

into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats?

²⁰ And he said, That which cometh out of the man,

that defileth the man.

²¹ For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders,

²² Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness:

²³ All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

SECTION IV

THE WOMAN OF CANAAN

Matt. xv. 21—28.

²¹ Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of Tyre and Sidon. ²² And, behold, a woman of Canaan came out of the same coasts, and cried unto him, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* Son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil

Mark vii. 24—30.

²⁴ And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of Tyre and Sidon;

Matt. xv. 21—28.

²³ But he answered her not a word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying, Send her away; for she crieth after us. ²⁴ But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

²⁵ Then came she and worshipped him saying, Lord, help me

²⁶ But he answered and said,

It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* to dogs.

²⁷ And she said,

Truth, Lord: yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their master's table.

²⁸ Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great *is* thy faith: be it unto thee even as thou wilt.

Mark vii. 24—30.

and entered into an house, and would have no man know *it*: but he could not be hid. ²⁵ For a *certain* woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit, heard of him, and came and fell at his feet:

²⁶ The woman was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation: and she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

²⁷ But Jesus said unto her, Let the children first be filled: for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it* unto the dogs.

²⁸ And she answered and said unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the dogs under the table eat of the children's crumbs.

²⁹ And he said unto her,

For this saying go thy way;

Matt. xv. 21—28.

And her daughter was made whole from that very hour.

Mark vii. 24—30.

the devil is gone out of thy daughter.

³⁰ And when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.

SECTION V

A DEAF AND STAMMERING MAN HEALED

Matt. xv. 29.

²⁹ And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee.

Mark vii. 31.

³¹ And again, departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon, he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the coast of Decapolis*.

Mark vii. 32—37.

³² And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to put his hand upon him. ³³ And he took him aside from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spit, and touched his tongue; ³⁴ and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. ³⁵ And straightway his ears

were opened, and the string of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. ³⁶ And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it; ³⁷ and were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 30, 31.

SECTION VI

THE SECOND MIRACLE OF THE LOAVES

Matt. xv. 29—31.

²⁹ And *he* went up into a mountain, and sat down there.

³⁰ And great multitudes came unto him, having with them *those that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and cast them down at Jesus' feet; and he healed

them: ³¹insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to walk, and the blind to see: and they glorified the God of Israel.

Matt. xv. 32—38.

³² Then Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and said,

I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat:

and I will not send them away fasting,

lest they faint in the way.

³³ And his disciples say unto him, Whence should we

have so much bread in the wilderness,

Mark viii. 1—9.

¹In those days the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat,

Jesus called his disciples *unto him*, and saith unto them,

²I have compassion on the multitude, because they have now been with me three days, and have nothing to eat:

³And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way: for divers of them came from far.

⁴And his disciples answered him, From whence can a man satisfy these *men* with

bread here in the wilderness?

Matt. xv. 32—38.

as to fill so great a multitude?

³⁴ And Jesus saith unto them,
How many loaves have ye?
And they said, Seven, and a
few little fishes.

³⁵ And he commanded the
multitude to sit down on the
ground.

³⁶ And he took the seven
loaves,

and the fishes,
and gave thanks, and brake
them, and gave to his disciples,

and the disciples to the mul-
titude

³⁷ And they did all eat, and
were filled: and they took up
of the broken *meat* that was
left, seven baskets full.

³⁸ And they that did eat
were four thousand men,
beside women and children.

Mark viii. 1—9.

⁵ And he asked *them*,
How many loaves have ye?
And they said, Seven.

⁶ And he commanded the
people to sit down on the
ground:

and he took the seven
loaves,

and gave thanks, and brake,
and gave to his disciples

to set before *them*:
and they did set *them* before
the people.

⁷ And they had a few small
fishes: and he blessed, and
commanded to set them also
before *them*.

⁸ So they did eat, and were
filled: and they took up of
the broken *meat* that was left,
seven baskets.

⁹ And they that had eaten
were about four thousand.

SECTION VII

THE PHARISEES AGAIN SEEK A SIGN

Matt. xv. 39; xvi. 1—4.

³⁹ And he sent
away the multitude,

Mark viii. 9—13.

And he sent
them away.

¹⁰ And straightway

Matt. xv. 39; xvi. 1—4.

and took ship,

and came into the coast of
Magdala*.

Matt. xvi. 1—4.

¹The Pharisees also with
the Sadducees came*,

and tempting, desired him
that he would shew them a
sign from heaven.

²He answered and said
unto them, When it is even-
ing, ye say, *It will be fair*

weather: for the sky is red.
³And in the morning, *It*
will be foul weather to day:

for the sky is red and lowring.
O ye hypocrites, ye can dis-
cern the face of the sky; but
can ye not *discern* the signs
of the times? ⁴A wicked
and adulterous generation
seeketh after a sign; and
there shall no sign be given
unto it, but the sign of the
prophet Jonas. And he left
them, and departed.

Mark viii. 9—13.

he entered into a ship

with his disciples,

and came into the parts of
Dalmanutha.

¹¹ And the Pharisees came
forth, and began to question
with him, seeking of him a
sign from heaven, tempting
him.

¹² And he sighed deeply in
his spirit, and saith, Why
doth this generation seek after
a sign? verily I say unto
you, there shall no sign be
given unto this generation.

¹³ And he left them, and
entering into the ship again,
departed to the other side.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 45, 46.

SECTION VIII

THE LEAVEN OF SCRIPTURE INTERPRETED

Matt. xvi. 5—12.

⁵ And when his disciples
were come to the other side,

they had forgotten to take
bread*.

⁶ Then Jesus said unto
them, Take heed, and beware
of the leaven of the Phari-
sees and of the Sadducees.

⁷ And they reasoned among
themselves, saying, *It is* be-
cause we have taken no bread.

⁸ *Which* when Jesus
perceived, he said unto them,
O ye of little faith,

why reason ye
among yourselves, because ye
have brought no bread?

⁹ Do ye not yet understand,

neither remember

Mark viii. 14—21.

¹⁴ Now the
disciples had forgotten to take
bread, neither had they in the
ship with them more than one
loaf.

¹⁵ And he charged them,
saying, Take heed, beware
of the leaven of the Phari-
sees,

and of the leaven of Herod.

¹⁶ And they reasoned among
themselves, saying, *It is* be-
cause we have no bread.

¹⁷ And when Jesus
knew *it*, he saith unto them,

Why reason ye,

because ye
have no bread?

perceive ye not yet,
neither understand?

have ye your heart yet
hardened?

¹⁸ Having eyes, see ye not?
and having ears, hear ye not?
and do ye not remember?

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 52, 53, and Study of Gospels, p. 351.

Matt. xvi. 5—12

the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets

ye took up?

¹⁰ Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets

ye took up?

¹¹ How is it that ye do not understand that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees? ¹² Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

Mark viii. 14—21.

¹⁹ When I brake the five loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of fragments

took ye up?

They say unto him, Twelve.

²⁰ And when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full of fragments took ye up?

And they said, Seven.

²¹ And he said unto them, How is it that ye do not understand?

SECTION IX

*THE BLIND MAN AT BETHSAIDA**Mark viii. 22—26.*

²² And he cometh to Bethsaida; and they bring a blind man unto him, and besought him to touch him. ²³ And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the

town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought. ²⁴ And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking. ²⁵ After that

Mark viii. 22—26.

he put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up; and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. ²⁶And

he sent him away to his house, saying, Neither go into the town, nor tell *it* to any in the town.

SECTION X

Matt. xvi. 13—20.

¹³ When Jesus came
into
the coasts of Cesarea Philippi,

he asked his disciples,
saying,
Whom do men say that I
the Son of man
am?

¹⁴ And they said,
Some *say that thou art*
John the Baptist: some,
Elias; and others,
Jeremias,
or one of the prophets.

¹⁵ He saith unto them,
But whom say ye that I am?

¹⁶ And Simon Peter answered
and said,

Thou art the Christ,
the Son of the living God.

¹⁷ And Jesus answered and
said unto him, Blessed art
thou, Simon Bar-jona: for
flesh and blood hath not
revealed *it* unto thee, but
my Father which is in hea-

Mark viii. 27—30.

²⁷ And Jesus went out,
and his disciples into
the towns of Cesarea Philippi*:
and by the way

he asked his disciples,
saying unto them,
Whom do men say that I
am?

²⁸ And they answered,
John the Baptist: but some
say Elias; and others,
One of the prophets.

²⁹ And he saith unto them,
But whom say ye that I am?

And Peter answereth
and saith
unto him,
Thou art the Christ.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 61—63, and Study of Gospels, p. 352.

THE GREAT CONFESSION OF ST. PETER

Luke ix. 18—21.

¹⁸And it came to pass, as
he was alone praying, his dis-
ciples were with him :

and he asked them,
saying,
Whom say the people that I

am ?

¹⁹ They answering, said,

John the Baptist ; but some
say Elias ; and others say,

that one of the old prophets
is risen again.

²⁰ He said unto them,
But whom say ye that I am ?

Peter, answering,
said,

the Christ

of God.

Matt. xvi. 13—20.

ven. ¹⁸ And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. ¹⁹ And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

²⁰ Then charged he his disciples,

that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

Mark viii. 27—30.

³⁰ And he charged them

that they should tell no man of him.

SECTION XI

Matt. xvi. 21—23.

²¹ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples,

how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.

Mark viii. 31—38; ix. 1.

³¹ And he began to teach them,

that the Son of man

must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

Luke ix. 18—21.

²¹And he straitly charged
them,
and commanded *them*
to tell no man that thing.

THE PASSION FORETOLD

Luke ix. 22—27.

²²Saying,
The Son of man

must suffer many things,
and be rejected of the
elders, and chief priests,
and scribes, and be slain,
and be raised the third day.

Matt. xvi. 21—28.

²²Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee.

²³But he turned,

and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men.

²⁴Then said Jesus unto his disciples,

If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

²⁵For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake

shall find it,

²⁶For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

Mark viii. 31—38; ix. 1.

³²And he spake that saying openly.

And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him.

³³But when he had turned about and looked on his disciples,

he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan:

for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men.

³⁴And when he had called the people *unto him* with his disciples also, he said unto them,

Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

³⁵For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's,

the same shall save it.

³⁶For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?

³⁷Or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?

Luke ix. 22—27.

²³And he said to *them* all*,

If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

²⁴For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever will lose his life for my sake,

the same shall save it.

²⁵For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?

* See Study of Gospels, pp. 132. 353—355.

Matt. xvi. 21—28.

²⁷For the Son of man
shall come
in the glory of his Father
with his angels; and then he
shall reward every man ac-
cording to his works.

²⁸Verily I say unto you,
There be some
standing here, which shall not
taste of death, till they see
the Son of man coming in his
kingdom.

Mark viii. 31—38; ix. 1.

³⁸Whosoever therefore shall
be ashamed of me and of my
words in this adulterous and
sinful generation;
of him also shall the Son of
man be ashamed when he
cometh
in the glory of his Father
with the holy angels.

Mark ix. 1.

¹And he said unto them,
Verily I say unto you, That
there be some of them that
stand here, which shall not
taste of death, till they have
seen

the kingdom of God come
with power.

SECTION XII

Matt. xvii. 1—13.

¹And after six* days Jesus
taketh Peter,
James, and John his brother,
and bringeth them up into
an high mountain apart,

Mark ix. 2—13.

²And after six* days Jesus
taketh *with him* Peter, and
James, and John,
and leadeth them up into
an high mountain apart by

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 84.

Luke ix. 22—27.

²⁶ For whosoever shall
be ashamed of me and of my
words,

of him shall the Son of
man be ashamed, when he
shall come in his own glory,
and *in his* Father's, and of
the holy angels.

²⁷ But I tell you of a truth,
there be some
standing here, which shall not
taste of death, till they see

the kingdom of God.

THE TRANSFIGURATION

Luke ix. 28—36.

²⁸ And it came to pass
about an eight days after these
sayings,

he
took Peter and
John and James,
and went up into
a mountain

Matt. xvii. 1—13.

² And
 was transfigured before them :
 and his face
 did shine as the sun,
 and his raiment was
 white as
 the light.

³ And behold, there
 appeared unto them

Moses and Elias
 talking with him.

⁴ Then answered Peter, and
 said unto Jesus, Lord, it is
 good for us to be here: if thou
 wilt, let us make here three
 tabernacles; one for thee, and
 one for Moses, and one for
 Elias.

⁵ While he yet spake,

Mark ix. 2—13.

themselves :

and he
 was transfigured before them.

³ And his raiment became
 shining, exceeding white as
 snow ; so as no fuller on earth
 can white them.

⁴ And there
 appeared unto them

Elias with Moses :
 and they were talking with
 Jesus.

⁵ And Peter answered and
 said to Jesus, Master, it is
 good for us to be here :
 and let us make three
 tabernacles; one for thee, and
 one for Moses, and one for
 Elias.

⁶ For he wist not what to
 say; for they were sore afraid.

Luke ix. 28—36.

to pray.

²⁹ And as he prayed,

the fashion of his countenance
was altered,

and his raiment *was*
white *and*

glistening.

³⁰ And behold, there

talked with him two men,
which were Moses and Elias:

³¹ Who appeared in glory,
and spake of his decease which
he should accomplish at Jeru-
salem. ³² But Peter and they
that were with him were heavy
with sleep: and when they
were awake, they saw his
glory, and the two men that
stood with him. ³³ And it came
to pass, as they departed from
him,

Peter
said unto Jesus, Master, it is
good for us to be here:
and let us make three
tabernacles; one for thee, and
one for Moses, and one for
Elias:

not knowing what he
said.

³⁴ While he thus spake,

Matt. xvii. 1—13.

behold, a bright cloud
overshadowed them :

and behold a voice
out of the cloud, which said,
This is my beloved Son,
in whom I am well pleased :
hear ye him.

⁶ And when the disciples
heard *it*, they fell on their face,
and were sore afraid. ⁷ And
Jesus came and touched them,
and said, Arise, and be not
afraid.

⁸ And

when they had lifted up their
eyes, they saw no man,
save Jesus only.

⁹ And as they came down
from the mountain, Jesus
charged them, saying,
Tell the vision to no man ;
until the Son of man
be risen again from the
dead.

¹⁰ And his disciples asked
him, saying,

Mark ix. 2—13.

⁷ And there was a cloud
that overshadowed them :

and a voice
came out of the cloud, saying,
This is my beloved Son :

hear him.

⁸ And suddenly

when they had looked round
about, they saw no man any
more, save Jesus only with
themselves.

⁹ And as they came down
from the mountain, he
charged them, that they should
tell no man what things they
had seen, till the Son of
man were risen from the
dead.

¹⁰ And they kept that saying
with themselves,

questioning one with another
what the rising from the dead
should mean.

¹¹ And they asked him,
saying,

Luke ix. 28—36.

there came a cloud,
and overshadowed them: and
they feared as they entered
into the cloud.

²⁵ And there came a voice
out of the cloud, saying,
This is my beloved Son:

hear him.

³⁶ And when the voice was
past,

Jesus was found alone.

And they kept *it* close, and
told no man in those days any
of those things which they had
seen.

Matt. xvii. 1—13.

Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come?

¹¹ And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things.

¹² But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed.

Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. ¹³ Then the disciples understood that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

Mark ix. 2—13.

Why say the scribes that Elias must first come?

¹² And he answered and told them, Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man, that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought*.

¹³ But I say unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him.

SECTION XIII

Matt. xvii. 14—21.

¹⁴ And when they were come to the multitude,

Mark ix. 14—29.

¹⁴ And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multitude about them, and the scribes questioning with them.

¹⁵ And straightway all the

* See Study of Gospels, pp. 353, 354.

*THE MANIAC BOY**Luke ix. 37—42.*

³⁷ And it came to pass, that
on the next day *, when they
were come down from the hill,

much people met him.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 106.

Matt. xvii. 14—21.

there came to him a *certain*
man, kneeling down to him,

and saying,

¹⁵ Lord have mercy on
my son :

for he is lunatick, and sore
vexed : for oft-times he falleth
into the fire, and oft into the
water.

¹⁶ And I brought him to thy
disciples,

and they could not cure him.

¹⁷ Then Jesus answered and
said, O faithless and perverse
generation, how long shall
I be with you? how long shall
I suffer you? bring him hither
to me.

Mark ix. 14—29.

people, when they beheld him,
were greatly amazed, and run-
ning to *him* saluted him.

¹⁶ And he asked the scribes,
What question ye with them?

¹⁷ And one of the
multitude answered and said,
Master, I have brought unto
thee my son,

which hath a dumb spirit;

¹⁸ And wheresoever he taketh
him, he teareth him :
and he foameth,
and gnasheth with his teeth,
and pineth away :

and I spake to thy disciples
that they should cast him out;
and they could not.

¹⁹ He answereth him, and
saith, O faithless generation,
how long shall
I be with you? how long shall
I suffer you? bring him
unto me.

²⁰ And they brought him
unto him ;

Luke ix. 37—42.

³⁸ And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son: for he is mine only child.

³⁹ And, lo, a spirit

taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again,

and bruising him hardly departeth from him.

⁴⁰ And I besought thy disciples to cast him out; and they could not.

⁴¹ And Jesus answering said, O faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you? and suffer you? bring thy son hither.

⁴² And as he was yet a

Matt. xvii. 14—21.*Mark* ix. 14—29.

¹⁸ And Jesus rebuked the devil;

and he departed
out of him:

and the child was cured from

and when he saw him,
straightway the spirit
tare him;
and he fell to the ground, and
wallowed foaming. ²¹And he
asked his father, How long is
it ago since this came unto
him? And he said, Of a child.
²²And oft-times it hath cast
him into the fire, and into
the waters, to destroy him:
but if thou canst do any thing,
have compassion on us, and
help us. ²³Jesus said unto
him, If thou canst believe,
all things *are* possible to him
that believeth. ²⁴And straight-
way the father of the child
cried out, and said with tears,
Lord, I believe; help thou
mine unbelief. ²⁵When Jesus
saw that the people came run-
ning together, he rebuked the
foul spirit, saying unto him,
Thou dumb and deaf spirit,
I charge thee, come out of
him, and enter no more into
him. ²⁶And *the spirit* cried,
and rent him sore, and came
out of him: and he was as
one dead; insomuch that
many said, He is dead. ²⁷But
Jesus took him by the hand,
and lifted him up; and he
arose.

Luke ix. 37—42.

coming,

the devil threw him down
and tare *him*.

And Jesus rebuked the
unclean spirit,

and healed the child,

Matt. xvii. 14—21.
that very hour.

Mark ix. 14—29.

¹⁹Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said, Why could not we cast him out?

²⁰And Jesus said unto them, Because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

²¹Howbeit this kind goeth not out but by prayer and fasting.

²³And when he was come into the house, his disciples asked him privately, Why could not we cast him out?

²⁹And he said unto them,

This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and fasting.

SECTION XIV

Matt. xvii. 22, 23.

Mark ix. 30—32.

²²And while they abode in Galilee,

³⁰And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee; and

he would not that any man should know *it*.

Jesus

³¹For he taught his dis-

Luke ix. 37—42.

and delivered him again to
his father.

THE PASSION AGAIN FORETOLD

Luke ix. 43—45.

⁴³ And they were all amazed
at the mighty power of God.
But while they wondered every
one at all things which Jesus
did,

•

Matt. xvii. 22, 23.
said unto them,

The Son of man shall be
betrayed into the hands of
men :

²³ And they shall kill him,
and

the third day he shall be
raised again.

And they were exceeding
sorry.

Mark ix. 30—32.
ciples, and said unto them,

The Son of man is
delivered into the hands of
men,

and they shall kill him ;
and after that he is killed,
he shall rise the third day.

³² But they understood not
that saying,

and were afraid to ask him.

SECTION XV

THE SACRED DIDRACHMA

Matt. xvii. 24—27.

²⁴ And when they were come
to Capernaum*, they that re-
ceived tribute-money came to
Peter, and said, Doth not your
Master pay tribute ? ²⁵ He
saith, Yes. And when he was
come into the house, Jesus

prevented him, saying, What
thinkest thou, Simon ? of
whom do the kings of the
earth take custom or tribute ?
of their own children, or of
strangers ? ²⁶ Peter saith
unto him, Of strangers.

* See Study of Gospels, p. 354.

Luke ix. 43—45.

he said unto his disciples,

⁴⁴Let these sayings sink
down into your ears* :
for the Son of man shall be
delivered into the hands of
men.

⁴⁵But they understood not
this saying,

and it was hid from
them, that they perceived it
not :

and they feared to ask him
of that saying†.

* See Study of Gospels, p. 354. † See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 119.

Matt. xvii. 24—27.

Jesus saith unto him, Then are the children free. ²⁷Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first

cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

SECTION XVI

Matt. xviii. 1—5.*Mark* ix. 33—37.

³³And he came to Capernaum. And being in the house, he asked them, What was it that ye disputed among yourselves by the way? ³⁴But they held their peace; for by the way they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the greatest.

³⁵And he sat down, and called the twelve and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be last of all, and servant of all.

¹At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven?

²And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of

³⁶And he took a child, and set him in the midst of

† See Study of Gospels, pp. 354.

*WHICH SHALL BE THE GREATEST**Luke ix. 46—48.*

⁴⁶Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them should be greatest.

⁴⁷And Jesus perceiving the thought of their heart,

took

a child,
and set him by

Matt. xviii. 1—5.

them :

³ And said,
Verily I say unto you, Except
ye be converted, and become
as little children, ye shall not
enter into the kingdom of
heaven. ⁴Whosoever there-
fore shall humble himself as
this little child, the same is
greatest in the kingdom of
heaven.

⁵ And whoso shall receive
one such little child in my
name, receiveth me.

Mark ix. 33—37.

them :

and when he had taken him
in his arms,
he said unto them,

³⁷ Whosoever shall receive
one of such children in my
name, receiveth me:

and whosoever shall receive
me, receiveth not me, but him
that sent me.

SECTION XVII

Matt. xviii. 6—9.

Mark ix. 38—50.

³⁸ And John answered him,
saying, Master, we saw one
casting out devils in thy name,
and he followeth not us :

and we forbad him, because
he followeth not us.

³⁹ But Jesus said,
Forbid him not :

for there is no man which

Luke ix. 46—48.

him,

⁴⁸ And said unto them,

Whosoever shall receive
this child in my
name, receiveth me :
and whosoever shall receive
me receiveth him
that sent me :
for he that is least among you
all, the same shall be great.

FORBID HIM NOT

Luke ix. 49, 50.

⁴⁹ And John answered and
said, Master, we saw one
casting out devils in thy name,

and we forbad him, because
he followeth not us.

⁵⁰ And Jesus said unto him,
Forbid *him* not :

Matt. xviii. 6—9.

⁶But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea.

⁷Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh!

⁸Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off,

and cast *them* from thee:

it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire.

Mark ix. 38—50.

shall do a miracle in my name, that can lightly speak evil of me.

⁴⁰For he that is not against us is on our part.

⁴¹For whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink in my name, because ye belong to Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward*.

⁴²And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the

sea.

⁴³And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off:

it is better for thee to enter into life maimed,

than having two hands, to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched:

⁴⁴where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

⁴⁵And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off: it is better for

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 134—136.

Luke ix. 49, 50.

for he that is not against
us is for us.

Matt. xviii. 6—9.

And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.

Mark ix. 38—50.

thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched: ⁴⁶where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched.

⁴⁷And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out: it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire: ⁴⁸where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. ⁴⁹For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. ⁵⁰Salt is good; but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

SECTION XVIII

THE PARABLE OF FORGIVENESS *

Matt. xviii. 10—35.

¹⁰Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones; for I say unto you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. ¹¹For

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 142.

Matt. xviii. 10—35.

the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

¹²How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? ¹³And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. ¹⁴Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

¹⁵Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone; if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

¹⁶But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. ¹⁷And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. ¹⁸Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye

shall bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth, shall be loosed in heaven.

¹⁹Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth, as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven.

²⁰For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

²¹Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? ²²Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

²³Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants.

²⁴And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. ²⁵But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶The servant therefore fell down and worship-

Matt. xviii. 10—35.

ped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ²⁷ Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. ²⁸ But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. ²⁹ And his fellow-servant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ³⁰ And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. ³¹ So when his fellow-servants saw

what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. ³² Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt because thou desiredst me: ³³ shouldst not thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as I had pity on thee? ³⁴ And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. ³⁵ So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

PART VIII

Teaching at Jerusalem *

SECTION I

CHRIST URGED TO MANIFEST HIMSELF

John vii. 2—10.

NOW the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at hand. ³His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works that thou doest. ⁴For *there is* no man *that* doth any thing in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou do these things, shew thyself to the world. ⁵For neither did his brethren believe in him. ⁶Then Jesus said unto them, My time is not yet come but

your time is alway ready.

⁷The world cannot hate you, but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. ⁸Go ye up unto this feast: I go not up yet unto this feast, for my time is not yet full come. ⁹When he had said these words unto them, he abode *still* in Galilee.

¹⁰But when his brethren were gone up, then went he also up unto the feast: not openly, but as it were in secret.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, Pt. iii. § i

SECTION II

CHRIST AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES

John vii. 11—36.

¹¹ Then the Jews sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? ¹² And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him: for some said, He is a good man: others said, Nay; but he deceiveth the people. ¹³ Howbeit no man spake openly of him, for fear of the Jews.

¹⁴ Now about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. ¹⁵ And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? ¹⁶ Jesus answered them, and said, My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me. ¹⁷ If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of myself. ¹⁸ He that speaketh of himself seeketh his own glory; but he that seeketh his glory that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. ¹⁹ Did not Moses give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

²⁰ The people answered and said, Thou hast a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

²¹ Jesus answered and said unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

²² Moses therefore gave unto you circumcision, (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers,) and ye on the sabbath-day circumcise a man. ²³ If a man on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law of Moses should not be broken; are ye angry at me, because I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day? ²⁴ Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.

²⁵ Then said some of them of Jerusalem, Is not this he whom they seek to kill?

²⁶ But lo, he speaketh boldly, and they say nothing unto him: do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Christ? ²⁷ Howbeit, we know this man whence he is: but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth whence he is. ²⁸ Then

John vii. 11—36.

cried Jesus in the temple, as he taught, saying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am: and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. ²⁹ But I know him; for I am from him, and he hath sent me. ³⁰ Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come.

³¹ And many of the people believed on him, and said, When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this *man* hath done? ³² The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and

the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take him.

³³ Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and *then* I go unto him that sent me. ³⁴ Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come. ³⁵ Then said the Jews among themselves, Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles? ³⁶ What *manner of* saying is this that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find *me*: and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come?

SECTION III

*THE LAST DAY OF THE FEAST**John vii. 37—53. viii. 1.*

³⁷ In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood, and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. ³⁸ He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. ³⁹ (But this spake he of the Spirit, which

they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*; because that Jesus was not yet glorified.

⁴⁰ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this saying, said, Of a truth this is the Prophet. ⁴¹ Others said, This is the Christ. But some

John vii. 37—53. viii. 1.

said, Shall Christ come out of Galilee? ⁴² Hath not the scripture said, That Christ cometh of the seed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

⁴³ So there was a division among the people, because of him. ⁴⁴ And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

⁴⁵ Then came the officers to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why have ye not brought him? ⁴⁶ The officers answered, Never man spake like this man. ⁴⁷ Then answered them the Pharisees, Are ye also

deceived? ⁴⁸ Have any of the rulers or of the Pharisees believed on him? ⁴⁹ But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed. ⁵⁰ Nicodemus saith unto them, (he that came to Jesus by night, being one of them,) ⁵¹ Doth our law judge *any* man before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

⁵² They answered and said unto him, Art thou also of Galilee? Search and look; for out of Galilee ariseth no prophet. ⁵³ And every man went unto his own house.

¹ Jesus went unto the mount of Olives.

SECTION IV

THE WOMAN TAKEN IN ADULTERY

John viii. 2—11.

² And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. ³ And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, ⁴ they say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery,

in the very act. ⁵ Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? ⁶ This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not*. ⁷ So when they continued asking him, he lifted

John viii. 2—11.

up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. ⁸ And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground. ⁹ And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left

alone, and the woman standing in the midst. ¹⁰ When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? ¹¹ She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.

SECTION V

*THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD WILL LEAVE THE JEWS**John viii. 12—30.*

¹² Then spake Jesus again unto them*, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. ¹³ The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true. ¹⁴ Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go. ¹⁵ Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man. ¹⁶ And yet if I judge, my judg-

ment is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. ¹⁷ It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true. ¹⁸ I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me. ¹⁹ Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also. ²⁰ These words spake Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 181.

John viii. 12—30.

come. ²¹Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins: whither I go, ye cannot come. ²²Then said the Jews, Will he kill himself? because he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come. ²³And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. ²⁴I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. ²⁵Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus said unto them, Even *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning. ²⁶I

have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him. ²⁷They understood not that he spake to them of the Father. ²⁸Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he*, and *that* I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. ²⁹And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him. ³⁰As he spake these words many believed on him.

SECTION VI

THE TRUE CHILDREN OF ABRAHAM

John viii. 31—59.

³¹Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed; ³²and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. ³³They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest

thou, Ye shall be made free? ³⁴Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. ³⁵And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: *but* the Son abideth ever. ³⁶If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. ³⁷I

John viii. 31—59.

know that ye are Abraham's seed; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no place in you. ³⁸I speak that which I have seen with my Father: and ye do that which ye have seen with your father.

³⁹They answered and said unto him, Abraham is our father.

Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham's children, ye would do the works of Abraham.

⁴⁰But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard of God: this did not Abraham.

⁴¹Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, *even* God.

⁴²Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.

⁴³Why do ye not understand my speech? *even* because ye cannot hear my word.

⁴⁴Ye are of *your* father the devil; and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him.

When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is

a liar; and the father of it.

⁴⁵And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not.

⁴⁶Which of you convinceth me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me?

⁴⁷He that is of God heareth God's words: yet therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God.

⁴⁸Then answered the Jews, and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil?

⁴⁹Jesus answered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me.

⁵⁰And I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

⁵¹Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my saying, he shall never see death.

⁵²Then said the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou hast a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest, If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death.

⁵³Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself?

⁵⁴Jesus answered, If I honour myself, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God.

John viii. 31—59.

⁵⁵Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I should be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. ⁵⁶Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw *it*, and was glad. ⁵⁷Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen

Abraham? ⁵⁸Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

⁵⁹Then took they up stones to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple, going through the midst of them, and so passed by.

SECTION VII

THE MAN BLIND FROM HIS BIRTH

John ix. 1—41.

¹And as *Jesus* passed by *, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth. ²And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man or his parents, that he was born blind? ³Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. ⁴I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. ⁵As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world. ⁶When he had thus spoken, he spat on the

ground, and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay: ⁷and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and washed, and came seeing.

⁸The neighbours therefore, and they which before had seen him that he was blind, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? ⁹Some said, This is he: others *said*, He is like him: *but* he said, I am *he*.

¹⁰Therefore said they unto him, How were thine eyes

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 204.

John ix. 1—41.

opened? ¹¹He answered and said, A man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to the pool of Siloam, and wash: and I went and washed, and I received sight. ¹²Then said they unto him, Where is he? He said, I know not.

¹³They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. ¹⁴And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes. ¹⁵Then again the Pharisees also asked him how he had received his sight. He said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do see. ¹⁶Therefore said some of the Pharisees, This man is not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day. Others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles? And there was a division among them. ¹⁷They say unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, that he hath opened thine eyes? He said, He is a prophet.

¹⁸But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight. ¹⁹And

they asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? ²⁰His parents answered them and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: ²¹but by what means he now seeth we know not; or who hath opened his eyes, we know not, he is of age; ask him: he shall speak for himself. ²²These words spake his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. ²³Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

²⁴Then again called they the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give God the praise: we know that this man is a sinner. ²⁵He answered and said, Whether he be a sinner or no, I know not: one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see. ²⁶Then said they to him again, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? ²⁷He answered them, I have told you already, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear *it* again? will ye also be his disciples? ²⁸Then they re-

John ix. 1—41.

viled him, and said, Thou art his disciple: but we are Moses' disciples. ²⁹ We know that God spake unto Moses: *as for this fellow*, we know not from whence he is. ³⁰ The man answered and said unto them, Why herein is a marvellous thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and *yet* he hath opened mine eyes. ³¹ Now we know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth his will, him he heareth. ³² Since the world began, was it not heard that any man opened the eyes of one that was born blind. ³³ If this man were not of God, he could do nothing.

³⁴ They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

³⁵ Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he had found him, he said unto him, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? ³⁶ He answered and said, Who is he, Lord, that I might believe on him? ³⁷ And Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee. ³⁸ And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

³⁹ And Jesus said, for judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. ⁴⁰ And *some* of the Pharisees which were with him heard these words, and said unto him, Are we blind also? ⁴¹ Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth.

SECTION VIII

*THE SHEEP-FOLD AND GOOD SHEPHERD ***John x. 1—21.*

¹ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. ² But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. ³ To

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 219, 220.

John x. 1—21.

him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice; and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out.

⁴And when he putteth forth his own sheep, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice.

⁵And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers.

⁶This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

⁷Then said Jesus unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep.

⁸All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them.

⁹I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture.

¹⁰The thief cometh not but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have *it* more abundantly.

¹¹I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep. ¹²But he that is an hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the

sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth: and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth the sheep.

¹³The hireling fleeth, because he is an hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

¹⁴I am the good shepherd, and know my *sheep*, and am known of mine.

¹⁵As the Father knoweth me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down my life for the sheep.

¹⁶And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also

I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, *and* one shepherd.

¹⁷Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might take it

again. ¹⁸No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself.

I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again.

This commandment have I received of my Father.

¹⁹There was a division therefore again among the Jews for these sayings.

²⁰And many of them said, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

²¹Others said, These are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

SECTION IX

THE FEAST OF DEDICATION

John x. 22—42.

²²And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and it was winter. ²³And Jesus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch*. ²⁴Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, How long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. ²⁵Jesus answered them, I told you, and ye believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. ²⁶But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you. ²⁷My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me. ²⁸And I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any *man* pluck them out of my hand. ²⁹My Father which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand. ³⁰I and *my* Father are one.

³¹Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him.

³²Jesus answered them, Many good works have I shewed you from my Father: for which of those works do ye stone me? ³³The Jews answered him, saying, For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God. ³⁴Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, ye are gods? ³⁵If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; ³⁶say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? ³⁷If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. ³⁸But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe, that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

³⁹Therefore they sought again to take him: but he

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 233.

John x. 22—42.

escaped out of their hand, ⁴⁰ and went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John at first baptized; and there he abode. ⁴¹ And many resorted unto him, and said, John did no miracle: but all things that John spake of this man were true. ⁴² And many believed on him there.

SECTION X

*THE SISTERS MARTHA AND MARY**

Luke x. 38—42.

³⁸ Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman, named Martha, received him into her house. ³⁹ And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. ⁴⁰ But Martha was cumbered about much serving, and came to him, and said, Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve alone? bid her therefore that she help me. ⁴¹ And Jesus answered and said unto her, Martha, Martha, thou art careful and troubled about many things: ⁴² but one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

SECTION XI

THE SICKNESS OF LAZARUS

John xi. 1—16.

¹ Now a certain *man* was sick, *named* Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her sister Martha†. ² (It was *that* Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) ³ Therefore his sisters sent unto him, saying, Lord,

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 240, 241.

† See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 248, 249.

John xi. 1—16.

behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. ⁴ When Jesus heard *that*, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. ⁵ Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus. ⁶ When he had heard therefore that he was sick, he abode two days still in the same place where he was. ⁷ Then after that saith he to *his* disciples, Let us go into Judæa again. ⁸ *His* disciples say unto him, Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? ⁹ Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world.

¹⁰ But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.

¹¹ These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth: but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. ¹² Then said his disciples, Lord, if he sleep, he shall do well.

¹³ Howbeit Jesus spake of his death: but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep. ¹⁴ Then said Jesus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. ¹⁵ And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him. ¹⁶ Then said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

SECTION XII

THE RAISING OF LAZARUS

John xi. 17—44.

¹⁷ Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already. ¹⁸ Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off: ¹⁹ and many of the Jews came to Martha and

Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother. ²⁰ Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary sat *still* in the house. ²¹ Then said Martha unto Jesus, Lord,

John xi. 17—44.

if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. ²² But I know, that even now, whatsoever thou wilt ask of God, God will give *it* thee. ²³ Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. ²⁴ Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. ²⁵ Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: ²⁶ and whosoever liveth and believeth in me shall never die. Believest thou this? ²⁷ She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I believe that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come into the world.

²⁸ And when she had so said, she went her way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is come, and calleth for thee. ²⁹ As soon as she heard *that*, she arose quickly, and came unto him. ³⁰ Now Jesus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him. ³¹ The Jews then which were with her in the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up hastily, and went out,

following her, saying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there. ³² Then when Mary was come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died. ³³ When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, ³⁴ and said, Where have ye laid him? They said unto him, Lord, come and see. ³⁵ Jesus wept. ³⁶ Then said the Jews, Behold how he loved him! ³⁷ And some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even this man should not have died? ³⁸ Jesus therefore again groaning in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a stone lay upon it. ³⁹ Jesus said, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days. ⁴⁰ Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God? ⁴¹ Then

John xi. 17—44.

they took away the stone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jesus lifted up *his* eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard me. ⁴² And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the people which stand by I said *it*, that they may believe that

thou hast sent me. ⁴³ And when he thus had spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. ⁴⁴ And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

SECTION XIII

EFFECT OF THE MIRACLE

John xi. 45—54.

⁴⁵ Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the things which Jesus did, believed on him. ⁴⁶ But some of them went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things Jesus had done.

⁴⁷ Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles. ⁴⁸ If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him: and the Romans shall come and take away both our place and nation. ⁴⁹ And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high

priest that same year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, ⁵⁰ nor consider that it is expedient for us, that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not. ⁵¹ And this spake he not of himself: but being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should die for that nation; ⁵² and not for that nation only, but that also he should gather together in one the children of God that were scattered abroad. ⁵³ Then from that day forth they took counsel together for to put him to death.

John xi. 45—54.

⁵⁴ Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews ; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his disciples *.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 267

PART IX

Last Journey from Galilee to Jerusalem

SECTIONS I*, II

THE SEVENTY SENT FORTH

Luke x. 1—16.

AFTER these things the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city, and place, whither he himself would come.

²Therefore said he unto them, The harvest truly is great, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. ³Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. ⁴Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. ⁵And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. ⁶And if the son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. ⁷And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. ⁸And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you. ⁹And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. ¹⁰But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, Pt. iii. § i. On the "Order of Events."

Luke x. 1—16.

the same, and say, ¹¹ Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding, be ye sure of this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. ¹² But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

¹³ Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which have been done in you, they

had a great while ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. ¹⁴ But it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for you. ¹⁵ And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven, shalt be thrust down to hell.

¹⁶ He that heareth you, heareth me: and he that despiseth you, despiseth me: and he that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.

SECTION III

THE SEVENTY RETURN *

Luke x. 17—24.

¹⁷ And the seventy returned again with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.

¹⁸ And he said unto them I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven. ¹⁹ Behold,

I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you.

²⁰ Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are

subject unto you: but rather rejoice, because your names are written in heaven.

²¹ In that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes: even so, Father; for so it seemed good in thy sight.

²² All things are delivered to me of my Father: and no

* See Ministry, 3d Year, p. 289.

Luke x. 17—24.

man knoweth who the Son is, but the Father; and who the Father is, but the Son, and *he* to whom the Son will reveal *him*.

²³ And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said privately, Blessed *are* the eyes

which see the things that ye see; ²⁴ for I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen *them*; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard *them*.

SECTION IV

THE PARABLE OF THE GOOD SAMARITAN*

Luke x. 25—37.

²⁵ And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? ²⁶ He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? ²⁷ And he answering, said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. ²⁸ And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

²⁹ But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus, And who is my neighbour? ³⁰ And Jesus answering, said, A cer-

tain *man* went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him* half dead. ³¹ And by chance there came down a certain priest that way; and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. ³² And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked *on him*, and passed by on the other side. ³³ But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him he had compassion *on him*, ³⁴ and went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 294, 295.

Luke x. 25—37.

own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. ³⁵ And on the morrow, when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will

repay thee. ³⁶ Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? ³⁷ And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.

SECTION V

*THE DISCIPLES TAUGHT TO PRAY**Luke xi. 1—13.*

¹ And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. ² And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. ³ Give us day by day our daily bread. ⁴ And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

⁵ And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him

at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves: ⁶ for a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

⁷ And he from within shall answer, and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed: I cannot rise and give thee. ⁸ I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth. ⁹ And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. ¹⁰ For every one that asketh, receiveth; and

Luke xi. 1—13.

he that seeketh, findeth; and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. ¹¹If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? ¹²Or if he shall ask an

egg, will he offer him a scorpion? ¹³If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

SECTION VI

*THE WOMAN BOWED DOWN WITH INFIRMITY **

Luke xiii. 10—17.

¹⁰And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath. ¹¹And, behold, there was a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wise lift up *herself*. ¹²And when Jesus saw her, he called *her to him*, and said unto her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. ¹³And he laid *his* hands on her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

¹⁴And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation, because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said unto the people, There

are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the sabbath-day. ¹⁵The Lord then answered him, and said, *Thou* hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to watering? ¹⁶And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day? ¹⁷And when he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 312, 313

SECTION VII

ARE THERE FEW THAT BE SAVED?

Luke xiii. 22—35.

²²And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and journeying toward Jerusalem.

²³Then said one unto him, Lord, are there few that be saved? And he said unto them, ²⁴Strive to enter in at the strait gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

²⁵When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: ²⁶then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. ²⁷But he shall say, I tell you I know you not whence ye are; depart from me all ye workers of iniquity. ²⁸There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets in the kingdom

of God, and you yourselves thrust out. ²⁹And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. ³⁰And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

³¹The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying unto him, Get thee out, and depart hence: for Herod will kill thee. ³²And he said unto them, Go ye, and tell that fox, Behold, I cast out devils, and I do cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I shall be perfected. ³³Nevertheless I must walk to-day, and to-morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. ³⁴O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen doth gather her brood under

Luke xiii. 22—35.

her wings, and ye would not? see me, until *the time* come
³⁵ Behold, your house is left when ye shall say, Blessed is
 unto you desolate: and verily he that cometh in the name
 I say unto you, Ye shall not of the Lord*.

SECTION VIII

THE DROPSY HEALED ON THE SABBATH

Luke xiv. 1—6.

¹And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of the Chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that they watched him. ²And, behold, there was a certain man before him which had the dropsy. ³And Jesus answering, spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath-day? ⁴And they held their peace. And he took *him*, and healed him, and let him go: ⁵and answered them, saying, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a pit, and will not straightway pull him out on the sabbath-day? ⁶And they could not answer him again to these things.

SECTION IX

THE PARABLES AT THE FEAST†

Luke xiv. 7—14.

⁷And he put forth a parable to those which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief rooms; saying unto them, ⁸When thou art bidden of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; ⁹and he that bade thee and him, come and say to thee, Give

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 321.

† See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 325.

Luke xiv. 7—14.

this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. ¹⁰ But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. ¹¹ For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

¹² Then said he also to him

that bade him, When thou makest a dinner, or a supper, call not thy friends nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. ¹³ But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind; ¹⁴ and thou shalt be blessed; for they cannot recompense thee; for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just.

SECTION X

*THE GREAT SUPPER**Luke xiv. 15—24.*

¹⁵ And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed *is* he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God. ¹⁶ Then said he unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and bade many; ¹⁷ and sent his servant at supper-time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready. ¹⁸ And they all with one *consent* began to make excuse. The first

said unto him, I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it; I pray thee have me excused. ¹⁹ And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. ²⁰ And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. ²¹ So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house, being angry, said

Luke xiv. 15—24.

to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind. ²²And the servant said, Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is room.

²³And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them*, to come in, that my house may be filled. ²⁴For I say unto you, That none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

SECTION XI

ALL MUST BE RENOUNCED FOR CHRIST

Luke xiv. 25—35.

²⁵And there went great multitudes with him : and he turned, and said unto them, ²⁶If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. ²⁷And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. ²⁸For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have *sufficient* to finish *it*? ²⁹Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish *it*, all that behold *it* begin to

mock him, ³⁰saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. ³¹Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? ³²Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassador, and desireth conditions of peace. ³³So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

³⁴Salt *is* good : but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be sea-

Luke xiv. 25—35.

soned? ³⁵ It is neither fit for that hath ears to hear, let the land, nor yet for the dung- him hear.
hill; *but* men cast it out. He

SECTION XII

*THE LOST SHEEP AND THE LOST PIECE OF MONEY **

Luke xv. 1—10.

¹Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners for to hear him. ²And the Pharisees and scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them. ³And he spake this parable unto them, saying, ⁴What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost until he find it? ⁵And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. ⁶And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have

found my sheep which was lost. ⁷I say unto you, that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons, which need no repentance.

⁸Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? ⁹And when she hath found it, she calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. ¹⁰Likewise, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 338

SECTION XIII

THE PRODIGAL SON

Luke xv. 11—32.

¹¹And he said, A certain man had two sons: ¹²and the younger of them said to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them *his* living. ¹³And not many days after, the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. ¹⁴And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. ¹⁵And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. ¹⁶And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

¹⁷And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! ¹⁸I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father,

I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, ¹⁹and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. ²⁰And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. ²¹And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. ²²But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put *it* on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on *his* feet: ²³and bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it*; and let us eat and be merry: ²⁴for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.

²⁵Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. ²⁶And he called one of the

Luke xv. 11—32.

servants, and asked what these things meant. ²⁷ And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. ²⁸ And he was angry, and would not go in.

Therefore came his father out, and intreated him. ²⁹ And he answering, said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou

never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: ³⁰ but as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. ³¹ And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. ³² It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

SECTION XIV

*THE UNJUST STEWARD**Luke xvi. 1—13.*

¹ And he said also unto his disciples*, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. ² And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward. ³ Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stew-

ardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. ⁴ I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. ⁵ So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? ⁶ And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. ⁷ Then said

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 359—361.

Luke xvi. 1—13.

he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. ⁸And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the children of light.

⁹And I say unto you, Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations. ¹⁰Hethatisfaithful in that which is least, is

faithful also in much: and he that is unjust in the least is unjust also in much. ¹¹If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? ¹²And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own? ¹³No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

SECTION XV

*THE RICH MAN AND LAZARUS**Luke xvi. 14—31.*

¹⁴And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided him. ¹⁵And he said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the sight of God.

¹⁶The law and the prophets were until John: since that

time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into it. ¹⁷And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail.

¹⁸Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband committeth adultery.

¹⁹There was a certain rich

Luke xvi. 14—31.

man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: ²⁰and there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, ²¹and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. ²²And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; ²³and in hell he lifted up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. ²⁴And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. ²⁵But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good

things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. ²⁶And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from thence. ²⁷Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: ²⁸for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. ²⁹Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the prophets, let them hear them. ³⁰And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. ³¹And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

SECTION XVI

DISCIPLES WARNED OF OFFENCES

Luke xvii. 1—10.

¹Then said he unto the disciples, It is impossible but that offences will come: but woe *unto him*, through whom they come! ²It were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones. ³Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him. ⁴And if he trespass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

⁵And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith. ⁶And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou

plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the sea; and it should obey you. ⁷But which of you, having a servant plowing or feeding cattle, will say unto him by and by, when he is come from the field, Go and sit down to meat? ⁸And will not rather say unto him, Make ready wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? ⁹Doth he thank that servant because he did the things that were commanded him; I trow not. ¹⁰So likewise ye, when ye shall have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants: we have done that which was our duty to do.

SECTION XVII

THE ZEAL OF JAMES AND JOHN REPROVED *

Luke ix. 51—56.

⁵¹ And it came to pass, he should be received up, he when the time was come that stedfastly set his face to go

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 397.

Luke ix. 51—56.

to Jerusalem, ⁵²and sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. ⁵³And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. ⁵⁴And when his disciples, James and John, saw *this*, they said, Lord, wilt

thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? ⁵⁵But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of. ⁵⁶For the Son of man is not come to destroy men's lives, but to save *them*. And they went to another village.

SECTION XVIII

*THE TEN LEPERS**Luke xvii. 11—19.*

¹¹And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. ¹²And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: ¹³and they lifted up *their* voices, and said, Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. ¹⁴And when he saw *them*, he said unto them, Go shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went, they were cleansed. ¹⁵And one of them,

when he saw that he was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God, ¹⁶and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. ¹⁷And Jesus answering, said, Were there not ten cleansed? but where *are* the nine? ¹⁸There are not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger. ¹⁹And he said unto him, Arise, go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

SECTION XIX

ON THE COMING OF THE KINGDOM

Luke xvii. 20—37.

²⁰ And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come*, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: ²¹ Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

²² And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. ²³ And they shall say to you, See here; or, see there: go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. ²⁴ For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the other *part* under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. ²⁵ But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. ²⁶ And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. ²⁷ They

did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. ²⁸ Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; ²⁹ but the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed *them all*. ³⁰ Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. ³¹ In that day, he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the house, let him not come down to take it away: and he that is in the field, let him likewise not return back. ³² Remember Lot's wife. ³³ Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. ³⁴ I tell you, in that night there shall be *two men* in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 407.

Luke xvii. 20—37.

other shall be left. ³⁵Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left. ³⁶Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the

other left. ³⁷And they answered and said unto him, Where, Lord? And he said unto them, Wheresoever the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

SECTION XX

*THE IMPORTUNATE WIDOW**Luke xviii. 1—8.*

¹And he spake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; ²saying, There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither regarded man: ³and there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. ⁴And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; ⁵yet

because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. ⁶And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust judge saith. ⁷And shall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them? ⁸I tell you that he will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?

SECTION XXI

*THE PHARISEE AND THE PUBLICAN**Luke xviii. 9—14.*

⁹And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were

righteous, and despised others: ¹⁰Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a

Luke xviii. 9—14.

Pharisee, and the other a publican. ¹¹ The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. ¹² I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. ¹³ And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so

much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. ¹⁴ I tell you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

SECTION XXII

DIVORCE AND CHASTITY*

Matt. xix. 1—12.

¹ And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus had finished these sayings,

he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts of Judea, beyond

Jordan;

² And great multitudes followed him:

and he healed them there.

³ The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?

Mark x. 1—12.

¹ And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea by the farther side of Jordan:

and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

² And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? tempting him.

³ And he answered and said unto them, What did Moses

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 432.

Matt. xix. 1—12.

⁴ And he answered and said unto them,

Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning made them male and female,

⁵ And said,
For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife:

and they twain shall be one flesh?

⁶ Wherefore they are no more twain, but one flesh.

What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

⁷ They say unto him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

⁸ He saith unto them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

⁹ And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his

Mark x. 1—12.

command you? ⁴ And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away.

⁵ And Jesus answered and said unto them,
For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.

⁶ But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female.

⁷ For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

⁸ And they twain shall be one flesh:

so then they are no more twain, but one flesh.

⁹ What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.

¹⁰ And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same *matter*.

¹¹ And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his

Matt. xix. 1—12.

wife,
except *it be* for fornication,
and shall marry another, com-
mitteth adultery :

and whoso marrieth her which
is put away doth commit adul-
tery.

¹⁰ His disciples say unto
him, If the case of the man be
so with *his* wife, it is not good
to marry. ¹¹ But he said unto
them, All *men* cannot receive
this saying, save *they* to whom
it is given. ¹² For there are
some eunuchs, which were
so born from *their* mother's
womb : and there are some
eunuchs, which were made
eunuchs of men : and there be
eunuchs, which have made
themselves eunuchs for the
kingdom of heaven's sake.
He that is able to receive *it*,
let him receive *it*.

Mark x. 1—12.

wife,

and marry another, com-
mitteth adultery
against her.

¹² And if a woman shall put
away her husband, and be
married to another, she com-
mitteth adultery.

SECTION XXIII

Matt. xix. 13—15.

¹³ Then there were brought
unto him little children, that

Mark x. 13—16.

¹³ And they brought
young children to him, that

LITTLE CHILDREN BROUGHT TO CHRIST **Luke* xviii. 15—17.

¹⁵ And they brought
unto him also infants, that

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 439. 127—129.

Matt. xix. 13—15.

he should put *his* hands on them, and pray :

and the disciples rebuked them.

¹⁴ But Jesus

said,

Suffer little children and forbid them not to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

¹⁵ And he
laid *his* hands on them,
and departed thence.

Matt. xix. 16—30.

¹⁶ And, behold, one came

and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life?

¹⁷ And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good?

Mark x. 13—16.

he should touch them :

and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*.

¹⁴ But when Jesus saw it he was much displeased,

and said unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me and forbid them not : for of such is the kingdom of God.

¹⁵ Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

¹⁶ And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.

SECTION XXIV

Mark x. 17—31.

¹⁷ And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do, that I may inherit eternal life?

¹⁸ And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good?

Luke xviii. 15—17.

he would touch
them :

but when
his disciples saw *it*, they
rebuked them,

¹⁶ But Jesus

called them *unto him*, and
said,

Suffer little children to
come unto me, and forbid them
not; for of such is the king-
dom of God.

¹⁷ Verily I say unto you,
Whosoever shall not receive
the kingdom of God as a little
child, shall in no wise enter
therein

THE RICH YOUNG RULER

Luke xviii. 18—30.

¹⁸ And a certain ruler

asked him, saying, Good
Master, what shall I do to
inherit eternal life ?

¹⁹ And Jesus said unto him,
Why callest thou me good ?

Matt. xix. 16—30.

*there is none good but one,
that is, God.*

but if thou wilt enter into
life, keep the commandments.

¹⁸ He saith unto him, Which?
Jesus said,

Thou shalt do no
murder, Thou shalt not commit
adultery, Thou shalt not steal,
Thou shalt not bear false wit-
ness,

¹⁹ Honour thy father and
thy mother : and, Thou shalt
love thy neighbour as thyself.

²⁰ The young man saith
unto him, All these things
have I kept, from my youth
up : what lack I yet ?

²¹ Jesus
said unto him, If thou wilt be
perfect,

go and sell that
thou hast, and give to the
poor, and thou shalt have trea-
sure in heaven ; and come

and follow me.

²² But when the young man
heard that saying, he went
away sorrowful : for he had
great possessions.

²³ Then said Jesus unto his

Mark x. 17—31.

*there is none good but one,
that is, God.*

¹⁹ Thou knowest the com-
mandments,

Do not commit
adultery, Do not
kill, Do not steal,

Do not bear false wit-
ness, Defraud not,

Honour thy father and
mother.

²⁰ And he answered and said
unto him, Master, all these
have I observed from my
youth.

²¹ Then Jesus beholding him
loved him, and said unto him,

One thing thou lackest :
go thy way, sell whatsoever
thou hast, and give to the
poor, and thou shalt have trea-
sure in heaven : and come,
take up the cross,
and follow me.

²² And he was sad at
that saying, and went
away grieved : for he had
great possessions.

²³ And Jesus looked round

Luke xviii. 18—30.

none *is* good, save one,
that is, God.

²⁰ Thou knowest the com-
mandments,

Do not commit
adultery, Do not
kill, Do not steal,

Do not bear false wit-
ness,

Honour thy father and
thy mother.

²¹ And he said,
All these
have I kept from my youth
up.

²² Now when Jesus heard
these things, he said unto him,

Yet lackest thou one thing :
sell all that
thou hast, and distribute unto
the poor, and thou shalt have
treasure in heaven : and come,

follow me.

²³ And when he
heard this, he was very
sorrowful : for he was
very rich.

²⁴ And when Jesus saw that
he was very sorrowful,

Matt. xix. 16—30.

disciples, Verily I say unto you, That a rich man shall hardly enter into the kingdom of heaven.

²⁴ And again I say unto you,

It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

²⁵ When his disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying, Who then can be saved?

²⁶ But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

²⁷ Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore?

²⁸ And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall

Mark x. 17—31.

about, and saith unto his disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

²⁴ And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

²⁵ It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

²⁶ And they were astonished out of measure, saying among themselves, Who then can be saved?

²⁷ And Jesus, looking upon them saith, With men *it is* impossible, but not with God: for with God all things are possible.

²⁸ Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

²⁹ And Jesus answered and said,

Luke xviii. 18—30.

he said,

How hardly shall they
that have riches enter into
the kingdom of God!

²⁵ For it is easier for a camel
to go through a needle's
eye, than for a rich man
to enter into the kingdom of
God.

²⁶ And they that heard

it, said, Who then can
be saved?

²⁷ And he
said, The things which are
impossible with men, are
possible with God.

²⁸ Then Peter
said, Lo, we
have left all, and followed
thee.

²⁹ And he
said unto them,

Matt. xix. 16—30.

sit in the throne of his glory,
ye also shall sit upon twelve
thrones, judging the twelve
tribes of Israel.

²⁹ And every one that hath
forsaken houses, or brethren,
or sisters, or father, or mother,
or wife, or children, or lands,
for my name's sake,

shall receive an
hundred fold,

and shall inherit
everlasting life.

³⁰ But many *that are* first
shall be last; and the last
shall be first.

Mark x. 17—31.

Verily I say unto you,
There is no man that hath
left house, or brethren,
or sisters, or father, or mother,
or wife, or children, or lands,
for my sake and the Gospel's,

³⁰ But he shall receive an
hundred fold now in this
time, houses, and brethren, and
sisters, and mothers, and chil-
dren, and lands, with perse-
cutions; and in the world to
come eternal life.

³¹ But many *that are* first
shall be last; and the last
first.

SECTION XXV

THE LABOURERS IN THE VINEYARD

Matt. xx. 1—16.

¹ For the kingdom of hea-
ven is like unto a man *that is*
an householder, which went
out early in the morning to
hire labourers into his vine-
yard. ² And when he had
agreed with the labourers for
a penny a day, he sent them
into his vineyard. ³ And he

went out about the third hour,
and saw others standing idle
in the market place, ⁴ and
said unto them, Go ye also
into the vineyard, and what-
soever is right I will give you.
And they went their way.
⁵ Again he went out about
the sixth and ninth hour, and

Luke xviii. 18—30.

Verily I say unto you,
There is no man that hath
left house, or brethren,
or parents,
or wife, or children, for

the kingdom of God's sake,
³⁰ Who shall not receive
manifold more in this present
time,

and in the world to
come life everlasting.

Matt. xx. 1—16.

did likewise. ⁶ And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? ⁷ They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive. ⁸ So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the last unto the first. ⁹ And when they came that *were hired* about

Matt. xx. 1—16.

the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

¹⁰ But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. ¹¹ And when they had

received *it*, they murmured against the good man of the house, ¹² saying, These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat

SECTION XXVI

Matt. xx. 17—19.

¹⁷ And Jesus
going up to Jerusalem

took
the twelve disciples apart in
the way, and said unto them,

¹⁸ Behold, we go up
to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be
betrayed unto the chief priests,
and unto the scribes, and they
shall condemn him to death,

Mark x. 32—34.

³² And they were in the
way going up to Jerusalem;
and Jesus

went before them:
and they were amazed; and
as they followed, they were
afraid*.

And he took again
the twelve,
and began to tell them
what things should happen
unto him,

³³ *Saying*, Behold, we go up
to Jerusalem;

and the Son of man shall be
delivered unto the chief priests,
and unto the scribes. and they
shall condemn him to death,

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 466.

Matt. xx. 1—16.

of the day. ¹³ But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? ¹⁴ Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. ¹⁵ Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? ¹⁶ So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen.

*THE PASSION AGAIN FORETOLD**Luke xviii. 31—34.*

³¹ Then he took *unto him* the twelve,
and said unto them,

Behold, we go up
to Jerusalem, and all things
that are written by the prophets
concerning the Son of
man shall be accomplished.

Matt. xx. 17—19.

¹⁹ And shall deliver him to
the Gentiles

to mock,

and to scourge,

and to crucify *him*:
and the third day he shall
rise again.

Mark x. 32—34.

and shall deliver him to
the Gentiles:

³⁴ And they shall mock him,

and shall scourge
him,

and shall spit upon him,
and shall kill him;
and the third day he shall
rise again.

SECTION XXVII

THE REQUEST OF JAMES AND JOHN *

Matt. xx. 20—23.

²⁰ Then came to him the
mother of Zebedee's children
with her sons,

worshipping *him*,

and desiring a certain thing of
him.

²¹ And he said unto her,
What wilt thou?

She saith unto him, Grant
that these my two sons may

Mark x. 35—45.

³⁵ And James and John the
sons of Zebedee come unto
him,

saying, Master, we would that
thou shouldest do for us
whatsoever we shall desire.

³⁶ And he said unto them,
What would ye that I should
do for you?

³⁷ They said unto him, Grant
unto us that we may

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, p. 469.

Luke xviii. 31—34.

³² For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked and spitefully intreated,

and spitted on :

³³ And they shall scourge him,

and put him to death : and the third day he shall rise again.

³⁴ And they understood none of these things : and this saying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken.

Matt. xx. 20—28.

sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom.

²² But Jesus answered and said,

Ye know not what ye ask.

Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ?

They say unto him, We are able.

²³ And he saith unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of my cup, and be baptized with the

Mark x. 35—45.

sit, one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory.

³⁸ But Jesus said unto them,

Ye know not what ye ask :

Can ye drink of the cup that I drink of ? and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with ?

³⁹ And they say unto him, We can.

And Jesus said unto them, Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of, and with the baptism that I

Matt. xx. 20—28.

baptism that I am baptized with:

but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

²⁴ And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

²⁵ But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said,

Ye know that the

princes of the Gentiles exer-

Mark x. 35—45.

am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:

⁴⁰ But to sit on my right hand and on my left hand is not mine to give; but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared.

⁴¹ And when the ten heard *it*, they began to be much displeased with James and John.

⁴² But Jesus called them *to him*, and saith unto them,

Ye know that they which are accounted

to rule over the Gentiles exer-

Matt. xx. 29—34.

²⁹ And as they departed from Jericho,
a great multitude followed him.

³⁰ And, behold, two* blind men

sitting by the way side,

SECTION XXVIII

Mark x. 46—52.

⁴⁶ And they came to Jericho;

and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples and a great number of people,

blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus,
sat by the highway side begging.

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 474, 475.

Matt. xx. 20—28.

cise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

²⁶ But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;

²⁷ And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant:

²⁸ Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

Mark x. 35—45.

cise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them.

⁴³ But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister:

⁴⁴ And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant of all.

⁴⁵ For even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister and to give his life a ransom for many.

THE BLIND MEN AT JERICO

Luke xviii. 35—43.

³⁵ And it came to pass that as he was come nigh unto Jericho,

a certain blind man

sat by the way side begging:

*Matt. xx. 29—34.**Mark x. 46—52.*

when they heard that
Jesus
passed by,

cried out, saying,
Have mercy on us,
O Lord, *thou* Son of David,

³¹ And the
multitude
rebuked them,
because they should hold their
peace :
but they cried the more,

saying,
Have mercy on us,
O Lord, *thou* Son of David,

³² And Jesus stood still, and
called them,

and said,
What will ye that I shall
do unto you ?

³³ They say unto him,
Lord, that our eyes may be
opened.

³⁴ So Jesus had compassion

⁴⁷ And when he heard that
it was Jesus of Nazareth,

he began to cry out, and say,
Jesus, *thou* Son of David,
have mercy on me.

⁴⁸ And many
charged him,
that he should hold his
peace :
but he cried the more a great
deal,

Thou Son of David,
have mercy on me.

⁴⁹ And Jesus stood still, and
commanded him to be called.

And they call the blind man,
saying unto him, Be of good
comfort, rise; he calleth thee.

⁵⁰ And he, casting away his
garment, rose, and came to
Jesus.

⁵¹ And Jesus answered and
said unto him,
What wilt thou that I should
do unto thee ?

The blind man said unto him,
Lord, that I might receive my
sight.

Luke xviii. 35—43.

³⁶ And hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.

³⁷ And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

³⁸ And he cried, saying,
Jesus, *thou* Son of David,
have mercy on me.

³⁹ And they which went before
rebuked him,

that he should hold his
peace :

but he cried so much the
more,

Thou Son of David,
have mercy on me.

⁴⁰ And Jesus stood, and
commanded him to be brought
unto him :

and when he was come near,
he asked him,

⁴¹ Saying,
What wilt thou that I shall
do unto thee ?

And he said,
Lord, that I may receive my
sight.

Matt. xx. 29—34.

on them, and touched their eyes.

And immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

Mark x. 46—52.

⁵² And Jesus said unto him,
Go thy way;
thy faith hath made thee whole.

And immediately he received his sight, and followed Jesus in the way.

SECTION XXIX

THE HOUSE OF ZACCHEUS

Luke xix. 1—10.

¹ And Jesus entered and passed through Jericho. ² And, behold, there was a man named Zaccheus, which was the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. ³ And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. ⁴ And he ran before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. ⁵ And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and saw him, and

said unto him, Zaccheus, make haste, and come down; for to day I must abide at thy house. ⁶ And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. ⁷ And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. ⁸ And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation,

Luke xviii. 35—43.

⁴²And Jesus said unto him,
Receive thy sight;
thy faith hath saved thee.

⁴³And immediately he received his sight, and followed him,
glorifying God: and all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

Luke xix. 1—10.

I restore *him* fourfold. ⁹And of Abraham. ¹⁰For the Son
Jesus said unto him, This day of man is come to seek and to
is salvation come to this house, save that which was lost.
forsomuch as he also is a son

SECTION XXX

PARABLE OF THE POUNDS *

Luke xix. 11—28.

¹¹ And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear. ¹² He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. ¹³ And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. ¹⁴ But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this *man* to reign over us. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded those servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading.

¹⁶ Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. ¹⁷ And he said unto him, Well, thou

good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. ¹⁸ And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. ¹⁹ And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. ²⁰ And another came, saying, Lord, behold, *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: ²¹ for I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. ²² And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: ²³ wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury? ²⁴ And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and

* See Ministry, 3rd Year, pp. 481, 482.

Luke xix. 11—28.

give *it* to him that hath ten pounds. ²⁵ (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.) ²⁶ For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away

from him. ²⁷ But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

²⁸ And when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to Jerusalem.

PART X

The Approach to Jerusalem

SECTION I

STATE OF FEELING IN THE CITY

John xi. 55—57.

AND the Jews' passover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to purify themselves. ⁵⁶Then sought they for Jesus, and spake among themselves, as they stood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feast? ⁵⁷Now both the chief priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if any man knew where he were, he should show *it*, that they might take him.

SECTION II

Matt. xxvi. 6, 7.

⁶ Now when Jesus was in Bethany*, in the house of Simon the leper,

Mark xiv. 3.

³ And being in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper,

* See Holy Week, pp. 5—8.

THE SUPPER AT BETHANY

John xii. 1—3.

Then Jesus six days before the Passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raised from the dead. ² There they made him a supper; and Martha served: but Lazarus

Matt. xxvi. 6, 7.

⁷ There came unto him
a woman having an alabaster
box of very precious ointment,
and poured *it* on his
head, as he sat *at meat*.

Mark xiv. 3.

as he sat at meat, there came
a woman having an alabaster
box of ointment of spikenard,
very precious; and she brake
the box, and poured *it* on his
head.

SECTION III

Matt. xxvi. 8—13.

⁸ But when his disciples
saw *it*, they had indignation,
saying,

To what purpose *is* this
waste?

⁹ For this ointment might
have been sold for much,

and given to the
poor.

Mark xiv. 4—9.

⁴ And there were some
that had indignation within
themselves, and said,

Why was this
waste of the ointment made?

⁵ For it might
have been sold for more than
three hundred pence,
and have been given to the
poor.

And they murmured against
her.

John xii. 1—3.

was one of them that sat at the table with him.

³ Then took Mary a pound of ointment of spike-nard, very costly,

and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

THE REMARK OF JUDAS

John xii. 4—8.

Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him,

⁵ Why was not this ointment

sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

⁶ This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and had

*Matt. xxvi. 8—13.**Mark xiv. 4—9.*

¹⁰ When Jesus understood it,
he said unto them,

Why trouble
ye the woman? for she hath
wrought a good work upon me.

¹¹ For ye have the poor
always with you;

but me ye have not always.

For

in that she hath poured this
ointment on my body,

she did *it* for my
burial.

¹³ Verily I say unto you,
Whosoever this gospel shall
be preached in the
whole world, *there* shall also
this, that this woman hath
done, be told for a memorial
of her.

⁶ And Jesus said,

Let her alone; why trouble
ye her? she hath
wrought a good work on me.

⁷ For ye have the poor
with you always, and whenso-
ever ye will ye may do them
good:

but me ye have not always.

⁸ She hath done what she
could:

she is come aforehand
to anoint my body to the
burying.

⁹ Verily I say unto you,
Whosoever this gospel shall
be preached throughout the
whole world, *this* also
that she hath
done shall be spoken of for a
memorial of her.

SECTION IV

THE MORNING OF PALM SUNDAY*

John xii. 9—11.

⁹ Much people of the Jews
therefore knew that he was
there: and they came not for

Jesus' sake only, but that they
might see Lazarus also, whom
he had raised from the dead.

* See Holy Week, pp. 26—30.

John xii. 4—8.

the bag, and bare what was
put therein.

⁷ Then said Jesus,

Let her alone.

Against the day of my bury-
ing hath she kept this.

⁸ For the poor
always ye have with you ;

but me ye have not always.

John xii. 9—11.

¹⁰ But the chief priests con-
sulted that they might put
Lazarus also to death ; ¹¹ be-
cause that by reason of him
many of the Jews went away
and believed on Jesus.

SECTION V

Matt. xxi. 1—7.*Mark* xi. 1—7.

¹And when they drew nigh
unto Jerusalem, and were
come to Bethphage *;

unto the mount
of Olives, then sent Jesus
two disciples,

²Saying unto them, Go
into the village over
against you, and straightway
ye shall

find an ass tied, and a
colt with her ;

loose *them* and bring *them*

unto me.

³And if any *man* say ought
unto you,

¹And when they came nigh
to Jerusalem,
unto Bethphage and Bethany,
at the mount

of Olives, he sendeth forth
two of his disciples,

²And saith unto them, Go
your way into the village over
against you : and as soon as
ye be entered into it, ye shall
find a

colt tied, whereon never
man sat; loose him and bring
him.

³And if any man say
unto you,

ye shall say,
The Lord hath need
of them ; and straightway he
will send them.

⁶And the disciples
went,

Why do ye this ?
say ye
that the Lord hath need
of him ; and straightway he
will send him hither.

⁴And they
went their way, and found the
colt tied by the door without
in a place where two ways
met;

* See Holy Week, pp. 31—44.

THE PROCESSION FROM BETHANY ON PALM SUNDAY

Luke xix. 29—35.

²⁹ And it came to pass,
when he was come nigh

to Bethphage and Bethany,
at the mount called *the mount*
of Olives, he sent

two of his disciples,

³⁰ Saying, Go ye
into the village
over against *you*; in the which
at your entering ye shall
find a
colt tied, whereon yet never
man sat: loose him, and bring
him hither.

³¹ And if any man ask
you,

Why do ye loose *him*?
thus shall ye say unto him,
Because the Lord hath need
of him.

³² And they that were sent
went their way, and found

even as he had said unto

John xii. 12—16.

¹² On the next day

much people that were come
to the feast, when they heard
that

Matt. xxi. 1—7.

and did as Jesus commanded
them,

Mark xi. 1—7.

and they loose him.

⁵ And certain of them that
stood there said unto them,
What do ye, loosing the colt?

⁶ And they said unto them
even as Jesus had commanded:
and

they let them go.

⁷ And brought the ass,
and the colt, and put on them
their clothes,

⁷ And they brought
the colt to Jesus, and cast their
garments on him ;

and they set *him* thereon.

⁴ All this was done, that it
might be fulfilled which was
spoken by the prophet, saying,

and he sat upon him.

⁵ Tell ye the daughter of
Sion, Behold, thy King cometh
unto thee, meek, and sitting
upon an ass, and a colt the
foal of an ass.

Luke xix. 29—35.

John xii. 12—16.

them.

³³And as they were loosing
the colt,

the owners
thereof said unto them,

Why loose ye the colt?

³⁴And they said,

The Lord hath need of him.

Jesus was coming to
Jerusalem,

¹³Took branches of palm-
trees, and went forth to meet
him.

³⁵And they brought him to
Jesus: and they cast their
garments upon the colt,

¹⁴And Jesus, when he had
found a young ass,
sat thereon;

and they set Jesus thereon.

as it is written,

¹⁵Fear not, daughter of
Sion: Behold, thy King
cometh, sitting

on an ass's colt.

¹⁶These things understood
not his disciples at the first:
but when Jesus was glorified,
then remembered they that
these things were written of
him, and *that* they had done
these things unto him.

SECTION VI

Matt. xxi. 8, 9.

⁸And a very
great multitude
spread their garments in the
way;
others cut down branches
from the trees, and strawed
them in the way.

Mark xi. 8—10.

⁸And many
spread their garments in the
way:
and others cut down branches
off the trees, and strawed
them in the way.

⁹And the multitudes that

went before, and
that followed,

⁹And they that

went before, and
they
that followed,

cried, saying,

Hosanna
to the Son of David:
Blessed *is*
he
that cometh in the name of
the Lord;

cried, saying,

Hosanna
Blessed *is*
he
that cometh in the name of
the Lord:

Hosanna in the highest.

¹⁰Blessed *be* the kingdom of
our father David, that cometh
in the name of the Lord:

Hosanna in the highest.

THE DESCENT OF THE MOUNT OF OLIVES

Luke xix. 36—40.*John* xii. 13. 17—19.³⁶ And as he went, they

spread their clothes in the
way.

³⁷ And when he was come
nigh, even now at the descent
of the mount of Olives,

the whole multitude
of the disciples

began to rejoice and praise
God with a loud voice for all
the mighty works that they
had seen ;

³⁸ Saying,

Blessed *be*
the King
that cometh in the name of
the Lord :

peace in heaven, and glory
in the highest.

Hosanna,

Blessed *is* the
King of Israel
that cometh in the name of
the Lord.

¹³ And cried,¹⁷ The people therefore that

SECTION VII

*CHRIST WEEPING OVER JERUSALEM**Luke xix. 41—44.*

⁴¹And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, ⁴²saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes. ⁴³For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a

Luke xix. 36—40.

³⁹And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples. ⁴⁰And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

John xii. 13. 17—19.

was with him, when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and raised him from the dead, bare record. ¹⁸For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done this miracle.

¹⁹The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Perceive ye how ye prevail nothing? behold, the world is gone after him.

Luke xix. 41—44.

trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, “and shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee;

and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

SECTION VIII

CHRIST ENTERING JERUSALEM

Matt. xxi. 10, 11. 14—17.

¹⁰ And when he was come into Jerusalem,

all the city was moved, saying, Who is this? ¹¹ And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

¹⁴ And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple; and he healed them.

¹⁵ And when the chief priests and scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children crying in the temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased, ¹⁶ and said unto him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

¹⁷ And he left them, and went out of the city into Bethany. And he lodged there.

Mark xi. 11.

¹¹ And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and into the temple.

And when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out into Bethany with the twelve.

SECTION IX

THE GREEKS BROUGHT TO CHRIST *

John xii. 20—36.

²⁰ And there were certain Greeks among them that came up to worship at the feast: ²¹ the same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. ²² Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: and again Andrew and Philip tell Jesus.

²³ And Jesus answered them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified. ²⁴ Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. ²⁵ He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal.

²⁶ If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will *my* Father honour. ²⁷ Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour: but for this

cause came I unto this hour. ²⁸ Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying*, I have both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.

²⁹ The people therefore, that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered: others said, An angel spake to him. ³⁰ Jesus answered and said, This voice came not because of me, but for your sakes. ³¹ Now is the judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. ³² And I, if I be lifted up from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me. ³³ This he said, signifying what death he should die.

³⁴ The people answered him, We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man? ³⁵ Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon

* See Holy Week, p. 62.

John xii. 20—36.

you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. ³⁶ While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.

SECTION X

UNBELIEF OF THE JEWS

John xii. 37—50.

³⁷ But though he had done so many miracles before them, yet they believed not on him: ⁴³ for they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.

³⁸ that the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed? ⁴⁴ Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. ⁴⁵ And he that seeth me, seeth him that sent me.

³⁹ Therefore they could not believe, because that Esaias said again, ⁴⁶ He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and I should heal them. ⁴⁷ I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me should not abide in darkness. ⁴⁸ And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. ⁴⁹ He that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day. ⁵⁰ For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say,

⁴² Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put out of the synagogue:

John xii. 37—50.

and what I should speak. whatsoever I speak therefore,
⁵⁰ And I know that his com- even as the Father said unto
mandment is life everlasting: me, so I speak.

SECTION XI

THE CURSING OF THE FIG TREE

Matt. xxi. 18, 19.

¹⁸ Now in the morning as
he returned
into the city, he hungered.

¹⁹ And when he saw a fig
tree in the way,

he came to it,

and found
nothing thereon, but leaves
only,

and said unto it, Let no
fruit grow on thee hence-
forward for ever.

Mark xi. 12—14.

¹² And on the morrow, when
they were come from Bethany,
he was hungry :

¹³ And seeing a fig
tree

afar off having leaves,
he came, if haply he might
find any thing thereon : and
when he came to it, he found
nothing but leaves ; for the
time of figs was not *yet*.

¹⁴ And Jesus answered
and said unto it, No man
eat fruit of thee hereafter
for ever.

And his disciples heard it

SECTION XII

Matt. xxi. 12, 13.

¹² And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

¹³ And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

Mark xi. 15—19.

¹⁵ And they come to Jerusalem :

And Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves ;

¹⁶ And would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through the temple.

¹⁷ And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

¹⁸ And the scribes and chief priests heard *it*, and sought how they might destroy him:

for they feared him, because all the people was

astonished at his doctrine.

¹⁹ And when even was come, he went out of the city.

THE BUYERS AND SELLERS IN THE TEMPLE

Luke xix. 45—48.

⁴⁵ And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought;

⁴⁶ Saying
unto them, It is written,
My house is
the house of prayer;
but ye have made it a den of
thieves.

⁴⁷ And he taught daily in the temple.

But the
chief priests and the scribes
and the chief of the people,
sought to
destroy him,

⁴⁸ And could not find what
they might do:

for all the people were
very attentive to hear him.

SECTION XIII

THE RETURN TO THE TEMPLE

Matt. xxi. 19—22.

¹⁹ And presently
the
fig tree withered away.

²⁰ And when the disciples
saw *it*, they marvelled, say-
ing, How soon is the fig tree
withered away!

²¹ Jesus answered and said
unto them,

Verily I say unto you,
If ye have faith, and doubt not,
ye shall not only do this *which*
is done to the fig tree, but also
if ye shall say unto this
mountain, Be thou removed,
and be thou cast into the sea;

it shall be done.

²² And
all things, whatsoever ye shall
ask in prayer, believing, ye

Mark xi. 20—26.

²⁰ And in the morning, as
they passed by, they saw the
fig tree dried up from the
roots.

²¹ And Peter calling to re-
membrance, saith unto him,
Master, behold, the fig tree
which thou cursedst is with-
ered away.

²² And Jesus answering saith
unto them, Have faith in God.

²³ For verily I say unto you,

That
whosoever shall say unto this
mountain, Be thou removed,
and be thou cast into the sea;
and shall not doubt
in his heart, but shall believe
that those things which he
saith shall come to pass;
he shall have whatsoever he
saith.

²⁴ Therefore I say unto you,
What things soever ye desire,
when ye pray, believe that ye

Matt. xxi. 19—22.
shall receive.

Mark xi. 20—26.
receive *them*, and ye shall
have *them*.

²⁵ And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.
²⁶ But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

PART XI

The Teaching in the Temple

SECTION I

Matt. xxi. 23—27.

Mark xi. 27—33.

²⁷And they come again to
Jerusalem :

AND

and

when he was come

as

he was walking
into the temple, in the temple,

the chief priests

there come to him
the chief priests and the
scribes

and the elders
of the people came unto him
as he was teaching, and said,
By what authority
doest thou these things? and
who gave thee this

and the elders,

authority?

²⁸And say unto him,
By what authority
doest thou these things? and
who gave thee this
authority to do these things?

²⁴And Jesus answered and
said unto them, I also will

²⁹And Jesus answered and
said unto them, I will also

THE QUESTION OF AUTHORITY *

Luke xx. 1—8.

¹ And it came to pass, *that*
on one of those days,

as he taught the people

in the temple, and preached
the gospel,

the chief priests and the
scribes came upon *him*, with
the elders,

² And spake unto him, saying,
Tell us by what authority
doest thou these things? or
who is he that gave thee this
authority?

³ And he answered and
said unto them, I will also

* See Holy Week, pp. 112—115.

Matt. xxi. 23—27.

ask you one thing, which if ye tell me,

I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things.

²⁵ The baptism of John, whence was it ?
from heaven, or of men ?

And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say unto us,

Why did ye not then believe him ?

²⁶ But if we shall say, Of men ; we fear the people ;

for all hold John as a prophet.

²⁷ And they answered Jesus, and said, We cannot tell.

And he said unto them,

Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

Mark xi. 27—33.

ask of you one question, and answer me,

and I will tell you by what authority I do these things.

³⁰ The baptism of John, was it
from heaven, or of men ?
answer me.

³¹ And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven ; he will say,

Why then did ye not believe him ?

³² But if we shall say, Of men ; they feared the people :

for all *men* counted John, that he was a prophet indeed.

³³ And they answered and said unto Jesus, We cannot tell.

And Jesus answering, saith unto them,

Neither do I tell you by what authority I do these things.

SECTION II

THE PARABLE OF THE TWO SONS

Matt. xxi. 28—32.

²⁸ But what think ye ? A *certain* man had two sons ; and he came to the first, and

said, Son, go work to-day in my vineyard. ²⁹ He answered and said, I will not : but after-

Luke xx. 1—8.

ask you one thing; and answer me:

⁴ The baptism of John,
was it
from heaven, or of men?

⁵ And they reasoned with
themselves, saying, If we shall
say, From heaven; he will say,

Why then believed
ye him not?

⁶ But and if we say, Of
men;
all the people will stone us:
for they be persuaded that
John was a prophet.

⁷ And they answered, That
they could not tell
whence *it was*.

⁸ And Jesus said
unto them,

Neither tell I you by what
authority I do these things.

Matt. xxi. 28—32.

ward he repented, and went.
³⁰ And he came to the second,
and said likewise. And he
answered and said, I *go*, sir:
and went not. ³¹ Whether of
them twain did the will of *his*

Matt. xxi. 28—32.

father? They say unto him,
The first. Jesus saith unto
them, Verily I say unto you,
That the publicans and the

harlots go into the kingdom of
God before you. ³² For John
came unto you in the way of
righteousness, and ye believed

SECTION III

Matt. xxi. 33—41.

³³ Hear another parable:

There was a certain house-
holder which planted a vine-
yard,

and hedged
it round about,

and digged a
winepress in it, and built a
tower,

and let it out to husbandmen,
and went into a far country:

³⁴ And when the time of the
fruit drew near,

he sent his
servants to the husbandmen,
that they might receive

the fruits of it.

³⁵ And the husbandmen took
his servants, and
beat one,
and killed another,

Mark xii. 1—9.

¹ And he began to speak
unto them by parables.

A certain man
planted a vineyard,

and set an hedge
about it,

and digged *a place for* the
winefat, and built a
tower,

and let it out to husbandmen,
and went into a far country:

² And at the season

he sent to
the husbandmen a servant,
that he might receive from
the husbandmen
of the fruit of the vineyard.

³ And they caught
him, and
beat *him*,
and sent *him* away empty.

⁴ And again he sent unto
and them

Matt. xxi. 33.—41.

stoned another.

³⁶ Again, he sent other servants more than the first: and they did unto them likewise.

³⁷ But last of all

he sent
unto them his son, saying,

'They will reverence my son.

³⁸ But when
the husbandmen saw the son,
they said
among themselves,

This is the heir,
come, let us kill him,
and let us seize on his inheritance.

³⁹ And they caught him, and
cast *him* out of
the vineyard,
and slew *him*.

⁴⁰ When the lord therefore
of the vineyard cometh,
what will
he do
unto those husbandmen?

Mark xii. 1—9.

another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled.

⁵ And again he sent another; and him they killed,

and many others; beating some, and killing some.

⁶ Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved,

he sent him
also last unto them, saying,

They will reverence my son.

⁷ But
those husbandmen
said
among themselves,

This is the heir;
come, let us kill him,
and the inheritance shall be
our's.

⁸ And they took him, and
killed *him*, and cast *him* out
of the vineyard.

⁹ What shall
therefore the lord of the vine-
yard do?

Luke xx. 9—16.

beat him also, and entreated
him shamefully,

and sent *him* away empty.

¹²And again he sent a third :
and they wounded him also,
and cast *him* out.

¹³Then said the lord of the
vineyard, What shall I do ?

I will send
my beloved son :

it may be
they will reverence *him*,
when they see him.

¹⁴But when
the husbandmen saw him,

they reasoned
among themselves,

saying,
This is the heir ;
come, let us kill him,
that the inheritance may be
our's.

¹⁵So they
cast him out of
the vineyard,
and killed *him*.

What there-
fore shall the lord of the
vineyard do unto them ?

Matt. xxi. 33—41.

⁴¹ They say unto him*,
He will miserably destroy
those wicked men, and will
let out *his* vineyard unto other
husbandmen, which shall ren-
der him the fruits in their
seasons.

Mark xii. 1—9.

He will come and destroy
the husbandmen, and will
give the vineyard unto others.

SECTION IV

Matt. xxi. 42—46.

⁴² Jesus
saith unto them,

Mark xii. 10—12.

Did ye never read in the
Scriptures,

The stone which the builders
rejected, the same is become
the head of the corner :

This is the Lord's doing,
and it is marvellous in our
eyes ?

⁴³ Therefore say I unto you,
The kingdom of God shall be
taken from you, and given to
a nation bringing forth the
fruits thereof.

⁴⁴ And whosoever shall fall
on this stone shall be broken :
but on whomsoever it shall
fall, it will grind him to
powder.

¹⁰ And have ye not read this
Scripture ;

The stone which the builders
rejected, is become
the head of the corner :

⁴¹ This was the Lord's doing,
and it is marvellous in our
eyes ?

* See Holy Week, pp. 143—145.

Luke xx. 9—16.

¹⁶ He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others.

And when they heard *it*, they said, God forbid.

THE STONE REJECTED OF THE BUILDERS

Luke xx. 17—19.

¹⁷ And he beheld them, and said,

What is this then that is written,

The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner?

¹⁸ Whosoever shall fall upon that stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

Matt. xxi. 42—46.

⁴⁵ And when the chief priests and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them.

⁴⁶ But when they sought to lay hands on him, they feared the multitude,

because they took him for a prophet.

Mark xii. 10—12.

¹² And they sought to lay hands on him, but feared the people:

for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them: and they left him and went their way.

SECTION V

PARABLE OF THE MARRIAGE FEAST *

Matt. xxii. 1—14.

¹ And Jesus answered, and spake unto them again by parables, and said, ² The kingdom of heaven is like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son, ³ and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. ⁴ Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come

unto the marriage. ⁵ But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: ⁶ and the remnant took his servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. ⁷ But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth; and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burnt up their city. ⁸ Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. ⁹ Go

* See Holy Week, pp. 154—159.

Luke xx. 17—19.

¹⁹And the chief priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him, and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

Matt. xxii. 1—14.

ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage.

¹⁰ So those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all, as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests.

¹¹ And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on

a wedding garment: ¹² and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. ¹³ Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast *him* into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. ¹⁴ For many are called, but few *are* chosen.

SECTION VI

Matt. xxii. 15—22.

¹⁵ Then went the Pharisees,
and took counsel how they
might entangle him in *his* talk.

¹⁶ And they sent out unto
him their disciples with
the Herodians,

saying,
Master, we know that thou
art true, and teachest the way
of God in truth, neither carest
thou for any *man* : for thou
regardest not the person of
men.

¹⁷ Tell us therefore, What
thinkest thou ? Is it lawful to
give tribute unto Cesar,
or not ?

¹⁸ But Jesus perceived
their wickedness, and said,
Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypo-
crites ?

¹⁹ Shew me the tribute
money.

And they

Mark xii. 13—17.

¹³ And they send unto
him certain of the Pharisees
and of the Herodians,

to catch him in
his words.

¹⁴ And when they were
come, they say unto him,
Master, we know that thou
art true,

and carest for no
man : for thou regardest not
the person of men, but teach-
est the way of God in truth :

Is it lawful to
give tribute to Cesar,
or not ?

¹⁵ Shall we give, or shall we
not give ? But he, knowing
their hypocrisy, said unto
them, Why tempt ye me ?

bring me a penny, that I may
see *it*.

¹⁶ And they

THE QUESTION OF TRIBUTE

Luke xx. 20—26.

²⁰ And they watched *him*,
and sent forth

spies, which should feign themselves just men,
that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and authority of the governor.

²¹ And
they asked him, saying,
Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly,

neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way of God truly :

²² Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar or no ?

²³ But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto them, Why tempt ye me ?

²⁴ Shew me a penny.

Matt. xxii. 15—22.

brought unto him a penny.

²⁰ And he saith unto them,
Whose *is* this image and
superscription ?

²¹ They say unto him,
Cesar's.

Then saith he unto them,
Render therefore unto Cesar
the things which are Cesar's;
and unto God the things that
are God's.

²² When they had heard
these words,

they marvelled,

and left him, and went their
way.

Matt. xxii. 23—32.

²³ The same day came to
him the Sadducees,
which say that there is no
resurrection, and asked
him,

²⁴ Saying,
Master, Moses said,
If a man die,

having no children,

Mark xii. 13—17.

brought *it*.

And he saith unto them,
Whose *is* this image and
superscription ?

and they said unto him,
Cesar's.

¹⁷ And Jesus answering,
said unto them,

Render to Cesar
the things that are Cesar's,
and to God the things that
are God's.

And they marvelled
at him.

SECTION VII

Mark xii. 18—27.

¹⁸ Then come unto
him the Sadducees,
which say there is no
resurrection ; and they asked
him,

saying,
¹⁹ Master, Moses wrote untous,
If a man's brother die,

and leave *his* wife *behind him*,
and leave no children,

Luke xx. 20—26.

Whose image and
superscription hath it?

They answered and said,
Cesar's.

²⁵ And he said unto them,
Render therefore unto Cesar
the things which be Cesar's;
and unto God the things which
be God's.

²⁶ And they could not take
hold of his words before the
people: and they marvelled
at his answer, and held their
peace.

THE QUESTION OF THE SADDUCEES

Luke xx. 27—40.

²⁷ Then came to *him*
certain of the Sadducees
which deny that there is any
resurrection; and they asked
him,

²⁸ Saying,
Master, Moses wrote unto us,
If any man's brother die,
having a wife,

and he die without children,

Matt. xxii. 23—32.

his brother shall marry
his wife, and raise up seed
unto his brother.

²⁵ Now there were with us
seven brethren: and the first
when he had married a wife,
deceased, and, having no issue,
left his wife unto his brother.

²⁶ Likewise the second also,

and the third,

unto the seventh.

²⁷ And last of all the woman
died also.

²⁸ Therefore in the resurrec-
tion
whose wife shall she be of
the seven? for they all had
her.

²⁹ Jesus answered and said
unto them,

Ye do err,
not knowing the scriptures,
nor the power of God.

³⁰ For in the resurrec-
tion they neither
marry, nor are given in mar-
riage,

Mark xii. 18—27.

that his brother should take
his wife, and raise up seed
unto his brother.

²⁰ Now there were
seven brethren: and the first
took a wife,
and dying left no seed.

²¹ And the second took her,
and died,
neither left he any seed:
and the third
likewise.

²² And the seven had her,
and left no seed:

last of all the woman
died also.

²³ In the resurrection there-
fore, when they shall rise,
whose wife shall she be of
them? for the seven had
her to wife.

²⁴ And Jesus answering said
unto them,

Do ye not therefore err,
because ye know not the scrip-
tures, neither the power of
God?

²⁵ For when they shall rise
from the dead, they neither
marry, nor are given in mar-
riage:

Luke xx. 27—40.

that his brother should take his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother.

²⁹ There were therefore seven brethren: and the first took a wife, and died without children.

³⁰ And the second took her to wife, and he died childless.

³¹ And the third took her;

and in like manner the seven also. And they left no children, and died.

³² Last of all the woman died also.

³³ Therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife.

³⁴ And Jesus answering said unto them,

The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: ³⁵but they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage:

*Matt. xxi. 23—32.**Mark xii. 18—27.*

but are as
the angels of God
in heaven.

but are as
the angels
which are in heaven.

³¹ But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read

that which was
spoken unto you by God,
saying,

³² I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

²⁶ And as touching the dead, that they rise: have ye not read in the book of Moses, how in the bush

God spake unto him,
saying,

I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob?

²⁷ He is not the God of the dead, but the God of the living:

ye therefore do greatly err.

Luke xx. 27—40.

³⁶ Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels;

and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection.

³⁷ Now that the dead are raised,

even Moses shewed at the bush,

when he calleth the Lord
the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob.

³⁸ For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living:
for all live unto him.

³⁹ Then certain of the scribes answering said, Master, thou hast well said. ⁴⁰ And after that, they durst not ask Him any *question at all*.*

* See Holy Week, p. 195.

SECTION VIII

THE FIRST AND GREAT COMMANDMENT

Matt. xxii. 33—40.

³³ And when the multitude heard *this*, they were astonished at his doctrine. ³⁴ But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together.

³⁵ Then one of them, *which was* a lawyer,

asked *him a question*, tempting him, and saying,

³⁶ Master, *which is* the great commandment in the law?

³⁷ Jesus said unto him,

Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.

³⁸ This is the first and great commandment.

³⁹ And the second *is* like unto it, Thou shalt love

Mark xii. 28—34.

²⁸ And one of the scribes

came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him,

Which is the first commandment of all?

²⁹ And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments *is*, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord:

³⁰ And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength.

This *is* the first commandment.

³¹ And the second *is* like, *namely* this, Thou shalt love

Matt. xxii. 33—40.
thy neighbour as thyself.

⁴⁰ On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

Mark xii. 28—34.
thy neighbour as thyself.
There is none other commandment greater than these.

³² And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: ³³ and to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to love *his* neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. ³⁴ And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.

SECTION IX

Matt. xxii. 41—46.

⁴¹ While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them, ⁴² Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, *The son of David.*

⁴³ He saith unto them,

How then doth
David
in spirit

call him Lord, saying,

⁴⁴ The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

till I make thine enemies thy footstool?

⁴⁵ If David then call him Lord, how is he his son?

⁴⁶ And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man* from that day forth ask him any more *questions*.

Mark xii. 34—37.

³⁴ And no man after that durst ask him *any question*.

³⁵ And Jesus answered and said, while he taught in the temple, How say the scribes that Christ is the son of David?

³⁶ For David himself said by the Holy Ghost,

The Lord said to my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

till I make thine enemies thy footstool.

³⁷ David therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then* his son?

And the common people heard him gladly.

OUR LORD'S QUESTION OF THE SON OF DAVID

Luke xx. 41—44.

⁴¹ And he
said unto them,

How say they that Christ
is David's son?

⁴² And David himself saith
in the book of Psalms,

The Lord said unto my
Lord, Sit thou on my right
hand,

⁴³ Till I make thine enemies
thy footstool.

⁴⁴ David
therefore
calleth him Lord,
how is he
then his son?

SECTION X

Matt. xxiii. 1—12.

¹Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,

²Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat: ³all therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. ⁴For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers.

⁵But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,

⁶And love

the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,

⁷And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. ⁸But be not ye

Mark xii. 38, 39.

³⁸And he said unto them in his doctrine,
Beware of the scribes,

which love to go in long clothing,
and *love* salutations in the market-places:

³⁹And the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues.

CAUTION AGAINST THE PHARISEES *

Luke xx. 45, 46.

⁴⁵ Then in the audience of
all the people, he said unto
his disciples,

⁴⁶ Beware of the scribes,

which desire to walk in long
robes,

and love greetings in the
markets ;

and the chief
rooms at feasts, and the highest
seats in the synagogues.

* See Holy Week, pp. 211, 212.

Matt. xxiii. 1—12.

called Rabbi: for one is your Master; *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren. ⁹ And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. ¹⁰ Neither be ye called masters: for one

is your Master, *even* Christ. ¹¹ But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. ¹² And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.

SECTION XI

Matt. xxiii. 13—39.

¹³ But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.

¹⁴ Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.

¹⁵ Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is made, ye make him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves.

¹⁶ Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides! which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the

Mark xii. 40.

⁴⁰ Which devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayers: these shall receive greater damnation.

*THE WOES DENOUNCED IN THE TEMPLE**Luke xx. 47*

⁴⁷ Which
devour widows' houses, and
for a shew make long
prayers: the same shall re-
ceive greater damnation.

Matt. xxiii. 13—39.

temple, he is a debtor. ¹⁷ *Ye* fools, and blind : for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold? ¹⁸ And, Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing ; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty. ¹⁹ *Ye* fools, and blind : for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift?

²⁰ Whoso therefore shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

²¹ And whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. ²² And he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

²³ Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith : these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. ²⁴ *Ye* blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel.

²⁵ Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye make clean the outside of the cup, and of the platter, but

Matt. xxiii. 13—39.

within they are full of extortion and excess. ²⁶ *Thou* blind Pharisee, cleanse first that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also.

²⁷ Woe, unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness.

²⁸ Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity.

²⁹ Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous, ³⁰ and say, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. ³¹ Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. ³² Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers.

³³ Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?

³⁴ Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise

Matt. xxiii. 13—39.

men, and scribes : and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify ; and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues, and persecute *them* from city to city : ³⁵ that upon you may come all the righteous blood shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel, unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar. ³⁶ Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation. ³⁷ O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not ! ³⁸ Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. ³⁹ For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

SECTION XII

THE WIDOW AT THE TREASURY *

Mark xii. 41—44.*Luke* xxi. 1—4.

⁴¹And Jesus sat over against
the treasury :

and beheld how the people
cast money into the treasury :
and many that were rich cast
in much.

⁴²And there came a certain
poor widow, and she threw in
two mites, which make a
farthing.

⁴³And he called *unto him*
his disciples, and saith unto
them,

Verily

I say unto you,
That this poor widow hath
cast more in than all they
which have cast into the
treasury :

⁴⁴For all *they* did cast in
of their abundance :

but she of her want did cast
in all that she had, *even* all
her living.

¹And he looked up,
and saw the rich men casting
their gifts into the treasury.

²And he saw also a certain
poor widow casting in thither
two mites.

³And he said,

Of a truth

I say unto you,
that this poor widow hath
cast in more than they all:

⁴For all these have of their
abundance cast in
unto the offerings of God :
but she of her penury hath
cast in all the living that she
had.

* See Holy Week, p. 236.

PART XII

The Discourse on the Mount of Olives

SECTION I

Matt. xxiv. 1—3.

AND Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him*

for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

¹And Jesus said unto them,

See ye not all these things?

Verily I say unto you,

there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

²And as he sat upon the mount of Olives,

the disciples

came unto him privately,

Mark xiii. 1—4.

¹And as he went out of the temple*, one of his disciples saith unto him,

Master, see what manner of stones, and what buildings *are here!*

²And Jesus answering, said unto him,

Seest thou these great buildings?

there shall not be left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

³And as he sat upon the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and Andrew, asked him privately,

* See Holy Week, p. 241.

INQUIRY OF THE DISCIPLES

Luke xxi. 5—7

⁵ And as some spake of the
temple

how it was adorned with good-
ly stones and gifts,

he said,

⁶ *As for* these things which
ye behold,

the days will come in the which
there shall not be left one
stone upon another, that shall
not be thrown down.

⁷ And they

asked him,

Matt. xxiv. 1—3.

saying,

Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign

of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

Mark xiii. 1—4.

⁴Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign when all these things shall be fulfilled?

SECTION II

Matt. xxiv. 4—8.

⁴And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

⁵For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

⁶And ye shall hear of wars,

and rumours of wars :

see that ye

be not troubled : for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

⁷For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom :

and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

Mark xiii. 5—8.

⁵And Jesus answering them began to say, Take heed lest any *man* deceive you :

⁶For many shall come in my name, saying, I am *Christ*; and shall deceive many.

⁷And when ye shall hear of wars,

and rumours of wars,

be ye not troubled : for *such things* must needs be; but the end *shall not be yet*.

⁸For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom :

and there shall be earthquakes in divers places, and there shall be famines, and troubles.

Luke xxi. 5—7.

saying, Master,
but when shall these
things be? and what sign *will*
there be when these things
shall come to pass?

THE BEGINNING OF SORROWS

Luke xxi. 8—11.

⁸ And he said,

Take heed that
ye be not deceived:

For many shall come in
my name, saying, I am *Christ*;

and the time draweth near:
go ye not therefore after them.

⁹ But when ye shall hear
of wars,
and commotions,

be not terrified: for these
things must first come to pass;
but the end *is* not by and by.

¹⁰ Then said he unto them,
Nation shall rise against
nation, and kingdom against
kingdom:

¹¹ And great earthquakes
shall be in divers places, and
famines, and pestilences;

and fearful sights and great

*Matt. xxiv. 4—8.**Mark xiii. 5—8.*

⁸All these *are* the beginning
of sorrows.

These *are* the beginnings
of sorrows.

SECTION III

*Matt. xxiv. 9—14.**Mark xiii. 9—13.*

⁹But take heed to your-
selves :

⁹Then shall they deliver you
up

to be afflicted,

and shall kill you :

and ye shall be hated of all
nations for my name's sake.

for they shall
deliver you up to councils;
and in the synagogues ye

shall be beaten : and ye shall
be brought before rulers and
kings

for my sake,

for a testimony
against them.

¹⁰And the gospel must first
be published among all na-
tions.

¹¹But when they shall lead
you, and deliver you up,
take no thought beforehand
what ye shall speak, neither
do ye premeditate:
but whatsoever shall be given
you in that hour, that speak
ye :

Luke xxi. 8—11.

signs shall there be from
heaven.

SUFFERING OF DISCIPLES

Luke xxi. 12—19.

¹² But before all these, they
shall lay their hands on you,
and persecute *you*,

delivering *you* up to
the synagogues
and into prisons,

being brought before
kings and rulers

for my name's sake.

¹³ And it shall turn to you
for a testimony.

¹⁴ Settle *it* therefore in your
hearts, not to meditate before
what ye shall answer :

¹⁵ For I will give you a

Matt. xxiv. 9—14.*Mark* xiii. 9—13.

¹⁰ And then shall many be
offended,

and
shall betray one another, and
shall hate one another,

for it is not ye that speak, but
the Holy Ghost*.

¹² Now the brother shall be-
tray the brother to death, and
the father the son; and chil-
dren shall rise up against *their*
parents,

and
shall cause them to be put to
death.

¹³ And ye shall be hated of
all *men* for my name's sake:

¹¹ And many false prophets
shall rise, and shall deceive
many.

¹² And because iniquity shall
abound, the love of many shall
wax cold.

¹³ But he that
shall endure unto the end, the
same shall be saved.

but he that
shall endure unto the end, the
same shall be saved.

¹⁴ And this gospel of the
kingdom shall be preached in
all the world for a witness unto
all nations; and then shall the
end come.

* See Holy Week, pp. 256—258.

Luke xxi. 12—19.

mouth and wisdom, which all
your adversaries shall not be
able to gainsay nor resist.

¹⁶ And ye shall be betrayed
both by
parents, and brethren,

and kinsfolks, and friends;
and *some* of you
shall they cause to be put to
death.

¹⁷ And ye shall be hated of
all *men* for my name's sake.

¹⁸ But there shall not an hair
of your head perish.

¹⁹ In your patience possess
ye your souls.

SECTION IV

Matt. xxiv. 15—28.

¹⁵ When ye therefore shall
see

the abomination of desolation,
spoken of by Daniel the pro-
phet, stand in the holy place,

(whoso readeth, let him un-
derstand:)

¹⁶ Then let them which be
in Judea flee into the moun-
tains:

¹⁷ Let him which is on
the housetop not come down

to take any thing out of his
house:

¹⁸ Neither let him which is
in the field return back
to take his clothes.

Mark xiii. 14—23.

¹⁴ But when ye shall
see

the abomination of desolation,
spoken of by Daniel the pro-
phet, standing
where it ought not,

(let him that readeth un-
derstand,)

then let them that be
in Judea flee to the moun-
tains:

¹⁵ And let him that is on
the housetop not go down into
the house, neither enter
therein,

to take any thing out of his
house:

¹⁶ And let him that is
in the field not turn back again
for to take up his garment.

¹⁹ And woe unto them that

¹⁷ But woe to them that

THE DAYS OF ANTICHRIST

Luke xxi. 20—24.

²⁰ And when ye shall
see

Jerusalem compassed with
armies,

then know that the desolation
thereof is nigh.

²¹ Then let them which are
in Judea flee to the moun-
tains;

and let them which are in the
midst of it depart out;

and let not them that are in
the countries enter thereinto.

²² For these be the days of
vengeance, that all things
which are written may be ful-
filled.

²³ But woe unto them that

Matt. xxiv. 15—28.

are with child, and to them
that give suck in those days!

²⁰ But pray ye that your
flight be not in the winter,
neither on the sabbath-day:

²¹ For then shall be
great tribulation,

such as was not since the be-
ginning of the world

to this time, no, nor ever
shall be.

²² And except those days
should be shortened, there
should no flesh be saved: but
for the elect's sake
those days shall be shortened.

²³ Then if any man shall
say unto you, Lo, here *is*
Christ, or there; believe *it*
not.

²⁴ For there shall arise false
Christs, and false prophets,
and shall shew great signs
and wonders; insomuch that,
if *it were* possible, they shall
deceive the very elect.

Mark xiii. 14—23.

are with child, and to them
that give suck in those days!

¹⁸ And pray ye that your
flight be not in the winter.

¹⁹ For *in* those days shall be
affliction,

such as was not from the be-
ginning of the creation
which God created

unto this time, neither
shall be.

²⁰ And except that the Lord
had shortened those days, no
flesh should be saved: but for
the elect's sake, whom he hath
chosen, he hath shortened the
days.

²¹ And then if any man shall
say to you, Lo, here *is* Christ;
or, lo, *he* is there; believe *him*
not:

²² For false
Christs and false prophets
shall rise, and shall shew signs
and wonders, to seduce, if *it*
were possible,
even the elect.

Luke xxi. 20—24.

are with child, and to them
that give suck, in those days!

for there shall be
great distress
in the land, and wrath upon
this people.

²⁴ And they shall fall by the
edge of the sword, and shall
be led away captive into all
nations: and Jerusalem shall
be trodden down of the Gen-
tiles, until the times of the
Gentiles be fulfilled.

Matt. xxiv. 15—28.

²⁵ Behold, I have told you before.

²⁶ Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it* not. ²⁷ For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. ²⁸ For wheresoever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

Mark xiii. 14—23.

²³ But take ye heed: behold, I have foretold you all things.

SECTION V

Matt. xxiv. 29—31.

²⁹ Immediately after the tribulation of those days

shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

and the stars shall fall from heaven,

Mark xiii. 24—27.

²⁴ But in those days, after that tribulation,

the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light,

²⁵ And the stars of heaven shall fall,

and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

³⁰ And then shall appear

and the powers that are in heaven shall be shaken.

*THE SON OF MAN COMING**Luke xxi. 25—27.*

²⁵ And there shall be
signs in the sun,
and in the moon,
and in the stars ;

and upon the earth distress of
nations, with perplexity ; the
sea and the waves roaring.

²⁶ Men's hearts failing them
for fear, and for looking after
those things which are coming
on the earth :

for the powers of
heaven shall be shaken.

Matt. xxiv. 29—31.

the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn,

and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

³¹ And he shall send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds,

from one end of heaven to the other.

Mark xiii. 24—27.

²⁶ And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory.

²⁷ And then shall he send his angels,

and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.

SECTION VI

Matt. xxiv. 32—51.

Mark xiii. 28—37.

³² Now learn a parable of the fig tree;

When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know

that summer is

nigh:

³³ So likewise ye,

²⁸ Now learn a parable of the fig tree:

When her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know

that summer is

near:

²⁹ So ye in like manner,

Luke xxi. 25—27.

²⁷ And then shall they see
the Son of man coming in a
cloud with power
and great glory.

THE WARNINGS

Luke xxi. 28—36.

²⁸ And when these things
begin to come to pass, then
look up, and lift up your
heads; for your redemption
draweth nigh.

²⁹ And he spake to them
a parable;

Behold the fig tree,
and all the trees;

³⁰ When they
now shoot forth,
ye see and know of your own
selves, that summer is now
nigh at hand.

³¹ So likewise ye,

Matt. xxiv. 32—51.

when ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

³⁴ Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled.

³⁵ Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.

³⁶ But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven,

but my Father only.

³⁷ But as the days of Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. ³⁸ For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, ³⁹ and knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. ⁴⁰ Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

⁴¹ Two *women shall be* grinding at the mill: the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Mark xiii. 28—37.

when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, *even* at the doors.

³⁰ Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done.

³¹ Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

³² But of that day and *that* hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

Luke xxi. 28—36.

when ye see these things
come to pass, know ye that the
kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

³² Verily I say unto you,
This generation shall not
pass away, till all be

fulfilled.

³³ Heaven and earth shall
pass away: but my words
shall not pass away.

³⁴ And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness,

*Matt. xxiv. 32—51.**Mark xiii. 28—37.*⁴² Watch therefore :³³ Take ye heed, watch and pray :

for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come. ⁴³ But know this, that if the good man of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up. ⁴⁴ Therefore be ye also ready : for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.

for ye know not when the time is.

³⁴ *For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch*.* ³⁵ Watch ye therefore : for ye know not when the master of the house cometh ; at even, or at midnight, or at the cock crowing, or in the morning : ³⁶ lest coming

* See Holy Week, pp. 320, 321.

Luke xxi. 28—36.

and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. ³⁵ For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth.

³⁶ Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.

Matt. xxiv. 32—51.

⁴⁵ Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? ⁴⁶ Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. ⁴⁷ Verily I say unto you, that he shall make him ruler over all his goods. ⁴⁸ But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; ⁴⁹ and shall begin to smite *his* fellow servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; ⁵⁰ the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in an hour that he is not aware of, ⁵¹ and shall cut him asunder, and appoint *him* his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Mark xiii. 28—37.

suddenly, he find you sleeping. ³⁷ And what I say unto you, I say unto all, Watch.

SECTION VII

PARABLE OF THE TEN VIRGINS

Matt. xxv. 1—13.

¹ Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. ² And five of them were wise, and five

Matt. xxv. 1—13.

were foolish. ³They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: ⁴but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. ⁵While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. ⁶And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet him. ⁷Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. ⁸And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are gone out. ⁹But the wise answered, saying, *Not so*; lest there be

not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves.

¹⁰And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage: and the door was shut.

¹¹Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. ¹²But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. ¹³Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of man cometh.

SECTION VIII

PARABLE OF THE TALENTS *

Matt. xxv. 14—30.

¹⁴For the kingdom of heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods: ¹⁵and unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. ¹⁶Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and

made them other five talents.

¹⁷And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. ¹⁸But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. ¹⁹After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. ²⁰And so he that had received five talents came, and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst

* See Holy Week, pp. 341, 342.

Matt. xxv. 14—30.

unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. ²¹ His lord said unto him, Well done, *thou* good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. ²² He also that had received two talents came, and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. ²³ His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. ²⁴ Then he which had received the one talent came, and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where

thou hast not strawed: ²⁵ and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine. ²⁶ His lord answered and said unto him, *Thou* wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: ²⁷ thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. ²⁸ Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents. ²⁹ For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, shall be taken away, even that which he hath. ³⁰ And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

SECTION IX

*THE SON OF MAN ON THE THRONE OF HIS GLORY**Matt. xxv. 31—46.*

³¹ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the

throne of his glory: ³² and before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from an-

Matt. xxv. 31—46.

other, as a shepherd divideth *his* sheep from the goats: ³³and shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

³⁴Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world. ³⁵For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in: ³⁶naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. ³⁷Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee*? or thirsty, and gave *thee* drink? ³⁸When saw we thee a stranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee*? ³⁹Or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? ⁴⁰And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you,

Inasmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

⁴¹Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: ⁴²for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: ⁴³I was a stranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. ⁴⁴Then shall they also answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto thee? ⁴⁵Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me. ⁴⁶And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.

Luke xxi. 37, 38.

³⁷And in the daytime*, he was teaching in the temple, and at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is

called *the mount* of Olives. ³⁸And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple for to hear him.

* See Holy Week, p. 368.

PART XIII

The Last Supper

SECTION I

Matt. xxvi. 1—5. 14—16.

AND it came to pass,
when Jesus had finished
all these sayings, he said unto
his disciples,

² Ye know that
after two days is *the feast*
of the passover,

and the Son of man is be-
trayed to be crucified.

³ Then assembled together
the chief priests, and the
scribes, and the elders of the
people, unto the palace of the
high priest, who was called
Caiaphas,

⁴ And consulted that they
might take Jesus by subtilty;
and kill him.

Mark xiv. 1, 2. 10, 11.

¹ After two days was *the*
feast of the passover, and of
unleavened bread :

and the chief priests and
scribes sought how they might
take him by craft, and put
him to death.

THE BETRAYAL *

Luke xxii. 1—6.

¹Now the
feast of unleavened bread
drew nigh, which is called the
Passover.

²And the chief priests and
scribes sought how they might
kill him;

* See Holy Week, pp. 370—375.

Matt. xxvi. 1—5. 14—16.

⁵ But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

¹⁴ Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot,

went unto

the chief priests,

¹⁵ And said *unto them*, What will ye give me, and I will deliver him unto you?

And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver.

¹⁶ And from that time he sought opportunity to betray him.

the disciples

Mark xiv. 1, 2. 10, 11.

² But they said, Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar of the people.

¹⁰ And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve,

went unto

the chief priests,

to betray him unto them.

¹¹ And when they heard *it*, they were glad, and promised to give him money,

And he sought how he might conveniently betray him.

his disciples

SECTION II

Matt. xxvi. 17—19.

¹⁷ Now the first *day* of the *feast of unleavened bread*

Mark xiv. 12—16.

¹² And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover,

Luke xxii. 1—6.

for they feared the people.

³Then entered Satan* into Judas, surnamed Iscariot, being of the number of the twelve.

⁴And he went his way, and communed with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him unto them.

⁵And they were glad, and covenanted to give him money.

⁶And he promised, and sought opportunity to betray him in the absence of the multitude.

*PREPARATION FOR THE PASSOVER**Luke xxii. 7—13.*

⁷Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the passover must be killed.

⁸And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and prepare us the passover, that we may eat.

⁹And they

* See Holy Week, pp. 375, 376.

Matt. xxvi. 17—19.
came to Jesus,

saying
unto him,
Where wilt thou that we
prepare for thee
to eat the passover * ?

¹⁸ And he said,
Go

into the city

to such a man, and say unto
him, The Master saith,

My time is at hand;

I will keep the passover
at thy house
with my disciples.

¹⁹ And the disciples

did as Jesus had appointed
them;

Mark xiv. 12—16.

said
unto him,
Where wilt thou that we go
and prepare that thou mayest
eat the passover ?

¹³ And he sendeth forth two
of his disciples,

and saith
unto them,
Go ye

into the city, and there shall
meet you a man bearing a
pitcher of water : follow him.

¹⁴ And wheresoever he shall
go in,

say ye to the good man of the
house, The Master saith,

Where is
the guest-chamber, where I
shall eat the passover

with my disciples ?

¹⁵ And he will shew you a
large upper room furnished
and prepared : there make
ready for us.

¹⁶ And his disciples went
forth,

and came into the city, and

* See Holy Week pp. 381—390.

Luke xxii. 7—13.

said
unto him,
Where wilt thou that we
prepare?

¹⁰And he said
unto them,

Behold, when ye are entered
into the city, there shall
a man meet you, bearing a
pitcher of water; follow him
into the house where he
entereth in.

¹¹And ye shall
say unto the good man of the
house, The Master saith unto
thee,

Where is
the guest-chamber, where I
shall eat the passover

with my disciples?

¹²And he shall shew you a
large upper room furnished:
there make
ready.

¹³And they went,

and

Matt. xxvi. 17—19.

and they made ready the
passover.

Mark xiv. 12—16.

found as he had said unto
them:

and they made ready the
passover.

SECTION III

Matt. xxvi. 20.

²⁰ Now when the even was
come, he sat down with the
twelve.

Mark xiv. 17.

¹⁷ And in the evening
he cometh with the
twelve.

Luke xxii. 7—13.

found as he had said unto them :

and they made ready the passover.

THE CUP OF THE OLD TESTAMENT

Luke xxii. 14—18.

¹⁴ And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the twelve apostles with him.

¹⁵ And he said unto them, With desire I have desired to eat this passover with you before I suffer. ¹⁶ For I say unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God. ¹⁷ And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and said, Take this, and divide *it* among yourselves. ¹⁸ For I say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God shall come.

John xiii. 1.

¹ Now before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

SECTION IV

WASHING THE DISCIPLES' FEET

John xiii. 2—17.

² And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's *son*, to betray him; ³ Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was come from God, and went to God; ⁴ he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel, and girded himself. ⁵ After that he pour-

eth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe *them* with the towel wherewith he was girded. ⁶ Then cometh he to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? ⁷ Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. ⁸ Peter saith unto

SECTIONS V* and VI

Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.*Mark* xiv. 21. 18—20.

²⁴ The Son of man goeth as it is written of him; but woe unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! it had been good for that man if he had not been born.

²¹ The Son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him: but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it for that man if he had never been born.

* See Holy Week, Pt. iv. § v. on the "Order of Circumstances."

John xiii. 2—17.

him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. ⁹ Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also *my hands and my head*. ¹⁰ Jesus saith to him, He that is washed needeth not save to wash *his* feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. ¹¹ For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean. ¹² So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was sat down again, he said

unto them, Know ye what I have done unto you? ¹³ Ye call me Master and Lord: and ye say well: for *so* I am. ¹⁴ If I then, *your* Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. ¹⁵ For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. ¹⁶ Verily, verily, I say unto you, The servant is no greater than his lord; neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. ¹⁷ If ye know these things, happy are ye if ye do them.

*JUDAS PRESENT**Luke xxii. 21—30.*

²¹ But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table.

²² And truly the Son of man goeth, as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he *is* betrayed!

John xiii. 18—30.

²³ And they began to enquire among themselves,

Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.*Mark* xiv. 21. 18—20.

Luke xxii. 21—30.

which of them it was that should do this thing.

²⁴ And there was also a strife among them, which of them should be accounted the greatest*. ²⁵ And he said unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them, and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors. ²⁶ But ye *shall* not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. ²⁷ For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth. ²⁸ Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations. ²⁹ And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me; ³⁰ that ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

John xiii. 18—30.

¹⁸ I speak not of you all: I know whom I have chosen: but that the scripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel against me. ¹⁹ Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to pass, ye

* See Holy Week, p. 419.

*Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.**Mark xiv. 21. 18—20.*

²¹ And as they
did eat, he said,

Verily, I say unto you,
that one of you
shall betray me.

²² And they were exceeding
sorrowful, and began every
one of them to say unto him,
Lord, is it I?

¹⁸ And as they sat and
did eat, Jesus said,

Verily, I say unto you,
one of you which eateth with
me shall betray me.

¹⁹ And they began to be
sorrowful, and
to say unto him
one by one, *Is it I?*
and another
said, Is it I?

²³ And he answered and

²⁰ And he answered and

Luke xxii. 21—30.

John xiii. 18—30.

may believe that I am *he*.
²⁰ Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that receiveth whomsoever I send receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me.
²¹ When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and testified, and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me.

²² Then the disciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he spake.

²³ Now there was leaning on Jesus' bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.
²⁴ Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask who it should be of whom he spake. ²⁵ He then lying on Jesus' breast, saith unto him, Lord, who is it? ²⁶ Jesus answered, He it is, to whom I shall give a sop, when I have dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to Judas Iscariot, *the son of Simon*.

Matt. xxvi. 24. 21—25.

said,

He that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me.

²⁵ Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said, Master, is it I? He said unto him, Thou hast said.

Mark xiv. 21. 18—20.

said unto them, *It is* one of the twelve, that dippeth with me in the dish.

SECTION VII

ST. PETER WARNED

John xiii. 31—38.

³¹ Therefore, when he was gone out, Jesus said, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him. ³² If God be glorified in him, God shall also glorify him in him-

self, and shall straightway glorify him. ³³ Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come;

Luke xxii. 21—30.*John* xiii. 18—30.

²⁷ And after the sop Satan entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him, That thou doest, do quickly. ²⁸ Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. ²⁹ For some of them thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him, Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. ³⁰ He then having received the sop went immediately out: and it was night.

John xiii. 31—38.

so now I say to you. ³⁴ A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another: as I have loved you, that ye also love one another.

³⁵ By this shall all *men* know

that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

³⁶ Simon Peter said unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered him, Whither I go, thou canst not

John xiii. 31—38.

follow me now; but thou shalt follow me afterwards. answered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake?
³⁷ Peter said unto him, Lord, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow till thou hast denied me thrice.
³⁸ Jesus

Luke xxii. 31—38.

³¹ And the Lord said, Simon, have prayed for thee, that thy Simon, behold, Satan hath faith fail not: and when thou desired *to have* you, that he art converted strengthen thy may sift *you* as wheat: ³² but I brethren. ³³ And he said unto

SECTION VIII

Matt. xxvi. 26.

²⁶ And as they were eating,

Jesus took bread,
 and
 blessed *it*, and brake *it*,
 and gave *it* to the disciples,
 and said, Take, eat;
 this is my body.

Mark xiv. 22.

²² And as they did eat,

Jesus took bread,
 and
 blessed, and brake *it*,
 and gave to them,
 and said, Take, eat:
 this is my body.

Luke xxii. 31—38.

him, Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and to death. ³⁴ And he said, I tell thee, Peter, The cock shall not crow this day before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou knowest me.

³⁵ And he said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. ³⁶ Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath

a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. ³⁷ For I say unto you, that this that is written must yet be accomplished in me, And he was reckoned among the transgressors: for the things concerning me have an end. ³⁸ And they said, Lord, behold here *are* two swords. And he said unto them, It is enough.

THE BREAD

Luke xxii. 19.

¹⁹ And

he took bread,

and

gave thanks, and brake *it*,
and gave unto them,

saying,

This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

1 Cor. xi. 23, 24.

²³ The Lord Jesus the *same* night in which he was betrayed took bread:

²⁴ And when he had given thanks, he brake *it*,

and said, Take, eat: this is my body which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

SECTION IX

CHRIST CONSOLING HIS DISCIPLES

John xiv. 1—31.

¹ Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. ² In my Father's house are many mansions: if it *were* not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. ³ And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. ⁴ And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

⁵ Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way? ⁶ Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. ⁷ If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him.

⁸ Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. ⁹ Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? he

that hath seen me hath seen the Father; and how sayest thou *then*, Shew us the Father? ¹⁰ Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself: but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he doeth the works. ¹¹ Believe me that I *am* in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.

¹² Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the works that I do shall he do also; and greater *works* than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father. ¹³ And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. ¹⁴ If ye shall ask any thing in my name, I will do *it*.

¹⁵ If ye love me, keep my commandments. ¹⁶ And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; ¹⁷ *even* the Spirit of

John xiv. 1—31.

truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him: but ye know him; for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. ¹⁸ I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you. ¹⁹ Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye see me: because I live, ye shall live also. ²⁰ At that day ye shall know that I *am* in my Father, and ye in me, and I in you. ²¹ He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them, he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself to him. ²² Judas saith unto him, not Iscariot, Lord, how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? ²³ Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him. ²⁴ He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me. ²⁵ These

things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you. ²⁶ But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

²⁷ Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. ²⁸ Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I. ²⁹ And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe. ³⁰ Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me. ³¹ But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence*.

* See Holy Week, p. 481.

SECTION X

*Matt. xxvi. 27—29.*²⁷And

he took the cup,

and gave
thanks, and gave *it* to them,
saying,

Drink ye all of it ;

²⁸ For this is my blood of
the New testament, which is
shed for many for the remis-
sion of sins.

*Mark xiv. 23—25.*²³And

he took the cup,

and when he had given
thanks, he gave *it* to them ;
and they all drank of it.

²⁴And he said unto them,

This is my blood of
the new testament, which is
shed for many.

²⁹ But I say unto you,
I will not drink henceforth of
this fruit of the vine, until that
day when I drink it new with
you in my Father's kingdom.

²⁵ Verily I say unto you,
I will drink no more of the
fruit of the vine, until that
day that I drink it new
in the kingdom of God.

SECTION XI

THE TRUE VINE

John xv. 1—27 ; xvi. 1—4.

¹ I am the true vine, and
my Father is the husband-
man. ² Every branch in me
that beareth not fruit he
taketh away : and every
branch that beareth fruit, he
purgeth it, that it may bring

forth more fruit. ³ Now ye
are clean through the word
which I have spoken unto you.
⁴ Abide in me, and I in you.
As the branch cannot bear
fruit of itself, except it abide
in the vine ; no more can ye,

THE CUP OF THE NEW TESTAMENT

Luke xxii. 20.

also the cup
²⁰ Likewise
 after supper,

saying,

This cup is the new testa-
 ment in my blood, which is
 shed for you.

1 Cor. xi. 25.

²⁵ After the same manner
 also *he took* the cup,
 when he had supped,

saying,

This cup is the new testa-
 ment in my blood :

this do ye, as oft as ye drink
it, in remembrance of me.

John xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.

except ye abide in me. ⁵ I am
 the vine, ye *are* the branches:
 he that abideth in me, and
 I in him, the same bringeth
 forth much fruit; for without
 me, ye can do nothing. ⁶ If
 a man abide not in me, he

is cast forth as a branch, and
 is withered; and men gather
 them, and cast *them* into the
 fire, and they are burned. ⁷ If
 ye abide in me, and my words
 abide in you, ye shall ask
 what ye will, and it shall be

John xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.

done unto you. ⁸Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples. ⁹As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love. ¹⁰If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. ¹¹These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.

¹²This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you. ¹³Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. ¹⁴Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. ¹⁵Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known unto you. ¹⁶Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father

in my name, he may give it you. ¹⁷These things I command you, that ye love one another.

¹⁸If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you. ¹⁹If ye were of the world the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. ²⁰Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. ²¹But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me. ²²If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. ²³He that hateth me hateth my Father also. ²⁴If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. ²⁵But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in

John xv. 1—27; xvi. 1—4.

their law, They hated me without a cause.

²⁶ But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me: ²⁷ and ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

¹ These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. ² They shall put you out of the synagogues:

yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. ³ And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me. ⁴ But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.

SECTION XII

PROMISE OF THE COMFORTER

John xvi. 5—33.

⁵ But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? ⁶ But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart. ⁷ Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you. ⁸ And when he is come, he will reprove

the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment: ⁹ of sin because they believe not on me; ¹⁰ of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more; ¹¹ of judgment, because the prince of this world is judged. ¹² I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. ¹³ Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall

John xvi. 5—33.

not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.

¹⁴ He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew *it* unto you. ¹⁵ All things that the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he shall take of mine, and shew *it* unto you.

¹⁶ A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me, because I go to the Father.

¹⁷ Then said *some* of his disciples among themselves, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and yeshall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? ¹⁸ They said, therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? we cannot tell what he saith. ¹⁹ Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? ²⁰ Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be

sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. ²¹ A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. ²² And ye now therefore have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you. ²³ And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will give *it* you. ²⁴ Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. ²⁵ These things have I spoken unto you in proverbs: but the time cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall shew you plainly of the Father. ²⁶ At that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Father for you: ²⁷ for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God. ²⁸ I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave

John xvi. 5—33.

the world, and go to the Father.

²⁹ His disciples said unto him, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no proverb. ³⁰ Now are we sure that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God. ³¹ Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe?

³² Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. ³³ These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

SECTION XIII

THE GREAT INTERCESSION

John xvii. 1—26.

¹ These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: ² as thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. ³ And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. ⁴ I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou

gavest me to do. ⁵ And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

⁶ I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. ⁷ Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. ⁸ For I have given unto them the

John xvii. 1—26.

words which thou gavest me; and they have received *them*, and have known surely that I came out from thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me. ⁹ I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for them which thou hast given me; for they are thine. ¹⁰ And all mine are thine, and thine are mine; and I am glorified in them.

¹¹ And now I am no more in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep through thine own name those whom thou hast given me, that they may be one, as we *are*.

¹² While I was with them in the world, I kept them in thy name: those that thou gavest

me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled. ¹³ And now come I to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they might have my joy fulfilled in themselves. ¹⁴ I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

¹⁵ I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. ¹⁶ They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

¹⁷ Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth.

¹⁸ As thou hast sent me into

SECTION XIV

Matt. xxvi. 30—35.

³⁰ And when they had sung an hymn, they

went out

into the mount of Olives.

Mark xiv. 26—31.

²⁶ And when they had sung an hymn, they

went out

into the mount of Olives.

John xvii. 1—26.

the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

¹⁹ And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth.

²⁰ Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word; ²¹ that they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou hast sent me. ²² And the glory which thou gavest me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one: ²³ I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that

the world may know that thou hast sent me, and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me.

²⁴ Father, I will that they also, whom thou hast given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world. ²⁵ O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent me. ²⁶ And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare it: that the love wherewith thou hast loved me may be in them, and I in them.

*THE GOING FORTH**Luke xxii. 39.*

³⁹ And he came out, and went,

as he was wont,
to the mount of Olives;

John xviii. 1.

¹ When Jesus had spoken these words,

he
went
forth with his disciples,

Matt. xxvi. 30—35.*Mark* xiv. 26—31.

³¹ Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad.

³² But after I am risen again, I will go before you into Galilee.

³³ Peter answered and said unto him, Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, yet will I never be offended.

³⁴ Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cock crow,

thou shalt deny me thrice.

³⁵ Peter said unto him,

Though I should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee.

Likewise also said all the disciples.

²⁷ And Jesus saith unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be scattered.

²⁸ But after that I am risen, I will go before you into Galilee.

²⁹ But Peter said unto him, Although all shall be offended, yet *will* not I.

³⁰ And Jesus saith unto him, Verily I say unto thee, That this day, *even* in this night, before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.

³¹ But he spake the more vehemently,

If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise.

Likewise also said they all.

Luke xxii. 39.

and his disciples also followed him.

PART XIV

The Passion

SECTION 1

Matt. xxvi. 36—46.

THEN cometh Jesus with
them unto a place called
Gethsemane,

Mark xiv. 32—42.

³²And they came
to a place which was named
Gethsemane;

and saith unto the disciples,
Sit ye here, while I go and
pray yonder.

and he saith to his disciples,
Sit ye here, while I shall
pray.

³⁷And he took with him
Peter and the two sons of
Zebedee, and began to be
sorrowful, and very heavy.

³⁸Then saith he unto them,
My soul is exceeding sorrow-
ful, even unto death: tarry ye
here, and watch with me.

³⁹And he went a little
farther,

³³And he taketh with him
Peter and James and John,
and began to be sore amazed,
and to be very heavy;

³⁴And saith unto them,
My soul is exceeding sorrow-
ful unto death: tarry ye
here, and watch.

³⁵And he went forward
a little,

OUR LORD'S AGONY IN THE GARDEN

Luke xxii. 40—46.

⁴⁰And when he was
at the place

John xviii. 1.

over the brook Cedron,

where was a garden, into the
which he entered, and his
disciples.

he said unto them,

Pray that ye enter not into
temptation.

⁴¹And he was withdrawn *
from them about a stone's
cast, and kneeled down,

* See *Passion*, pp. 10—12.

Matt. xxvi. 36—46.

and fell on his face,
and prayed,

saying, O my
Father,

if it be possible, let
this cup pass from me: never-
theless not as I will, but as
thou wilt.

Mark xiv. 32—42.

and fell on the ground,
and prayed that, if it were
possible, the hour might pass
from him.

³⁶ And he said, Abba,
Father, all things *are* possible
unto thee;

take
away this cup from me: never-
theless not what I will, but
what thou wilt.

⁴⁰ And he cometh unto the
disciples, and findeth them
asleep,

and saith unto Peter,

What, could ye not watch
with me one hour?

⁴¹ Watch and pray, that
ye enter not into temptation:
the spirit indeed *is* willing,
but the flesh *is* weak.

⁴² He went away again
the second time, and prayed,
saying, O my Father, if this
cup may not pass away from
me, except I drink it, thy
will be done.

⁴³ And he came and

³⁷ And he cometh,
and findeth them

sleeping,

and saith unto Peter,
Simon, sleepest thou?
couldst not thou watch
one hour?

³⁸ Watch ye and pray, lest
ye enter into temptation.

The spirit truly *is* ready,
but the flesh *is* weak.

³⁹ And again he went away,
and prayed,

and spake the
same words.

⁴⁰ And when he returned,

Luke xxii. 40—46.

and prayed,

⁴² Saying,

Father.

if thou be willing, remove
this cup from me: nevertheless
not my will, but thine, be done.
⁴³ And there appeared an angel
unto him from heaven, strengthening
him. ⁴⁴ And being in an agony
he prayed more earnestly:
and his sweat was as it were
great drops of blood falling
down to the ground. ⁴⁵ And
when he rose up from prayer,
and was come to his
disciples, he found them
sleeping for sorrow,

⁴⁶ And said unto them,

Why sleep ye?

rise and pray, lest
ye enter into temptation.

Matt. xxvi. 36—46.

found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy.

⁴⁴And he left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same words.

⁴⁵Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

⁴⁶Rise, let us be going: behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.

Mark xiv. 32—42.

he found them asleep again, (for their eyes were heavy,) neither wist they what to answer him.

⁴¹And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take *your* rest: it is enough, the hour is come; behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners.

⁴²Rise up, let us go; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

SECTION II

Matt. xxvi. 47—56.

Mark xiv. 43—52.

⁴⁷And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with

⁴³And immediately while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with

CHRIST BETRAYED AND APPREHENDED

Luke xxii. 47—53.

John xviii. 2—11.

²And Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oftentimes resorted thither with his disciples.

³Judas then, having received a band of men and officers from the chief priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and torches, and weapons.

⁴⁷ And while
he yet spake, behold

a multitude,

Matt. xxvi. 47—56.

swords and staves, from the
chief priests and elders of the
people.

⁴⁸ Now he that betrayed him
gave them a sign,
saying, Whomsoever I shall
kiss, that same is he :

hold him fast.

⁴⁹ And forthwith he
came
to Jesus,

and said, Hail, master ;
and kissed him.

⁵⁰ And Jesus said unto him,
Friend,
wherefore art thou come ?

Mark xiv. 43—52.

swords and staves, from the
chief priests and the scribes
and the elders.

⁴⁴ And he that betrayed him
had given them a token,
saying, Whomsoever I shall
kiss, that same is he ;
take him,

and lead *him* away safely.

⁴⁵ And as soon as he was
come, he goeth
straightway to him,

and saith, Master, master ;
and kissed him.

Luke xxii. 47—53.*John* xviii. 2—11.

and he that was called Judas,
one of the twelve, went before
them*,

and drew near unto Jesus
to kiss him.

⁴⁸ But Jesus said unto him,
Judas,

betrayest thou the Son of man
with a kiss?

⁴ Jesus therefore, knowing
all things that should come
upon him, went forth, and said
unto them, Whom seek ye?
⁵ They answered him, Jesus of
Nazareth. Jesus saith unto
them, I am *he*. And Judas
also, which betrayed him, stood
with them. ⁶ As soon then as
he had said unto them, I am
he, they went backward, and
fell to the ground. ⁷ Then

* See *Passion*, pp. 41—43.

*Matt. xxvi. 47—56.**Mark xiv. 43—52.*

Then came they, and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

⁴⁶ And they laid their hands on him, and took him.

⁵¹ And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus,

⁴⁷ And one of them that stood by,

stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear.

drew a sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off his ear.

⁵² Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. ⁵³ Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels? ⁵⁴ But how then shall the scriptures be ful-

Luke xvii. 47—53.

⁴⁹ When they which were about him saw what would follow, they said unto him, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

⁵⁰ And one of them

smote
the servant of the high priest,
and cut off his right ear.

John xviii. 2—11.

asked he them again, Whom seek ye? And they said Jesus of Nazareth. ⁸ Jesus answered, I have told you that I am *he*: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: ⁹ that the saying might be fulfilled, which he spake, Of them which thou gavest me have I lost none.

¹⁰ Then

Simon Peter

having a
sword drew it, and smote
the high priest's servant,
and cut off his right ear.

The servant's name was Malchus.

¹¹ Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath:

Matt. xxvi. 47—56.
filled, that thus it must be ?

Mark xiv. 43—52.

⁵⁵ In that same hour
said Jesus
to the multitudes,

⁴⁸ And Jesus answered and
said unto them,

Are ye come out as
against a thief with swords
and staves for to take me ?

I sat daily with you
teaching in the temple, and
ye laid no hold on me.

Are ye come out, as
against a thief, with swords
and *with* staves to take me ?

⁴⁹ I was daily with you
in the temple teaching, and
ye took me not :

⁵⁶ But all this was done, that
the scriptures of the prophets
might be fulfilled.

Then all the disciples for-
sook him, and fled.

but
the scriptures

must be fulfilled.

⁵⁰ And they all for-
sook him, and fled.

⁵¹ And there followed him a
certain young man, having a
linen cloth cast about *his*
naked *body* ; and the young
men laid hold on him :
⁵² and he left the linen cloth,
and fled from them naked.

Luke xxii. 47—53.

John xviii. 2—11.

the cup which my Father hath
given me, shall I not drink it ?

⁵¹ And Jesus answered and
said, Suffer ye thus far. And
he touched his ear and healed
him.

⁵² Then Jesus
said unto the chief priests, and
captains of the temple, and
the elders, which were come
to him. Be ye come out, as
against a thief, with swords
and staves ?

⁵³ When I was daily with
you in the temple,
ye stretched forth no hands
against me : but this is your
hour, and the power of dark-
ness.

SECTION III

Matt. xxvi. 57—75.*Mark* xiv. 53—72.

⁵⁷ And they that had laid hold on Jesus led *him* away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled.

⁵⁸ But Peter followed him
afar off,

⁵³ And they led Jesus away to the high priest:
and with him were assembled all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

⁵⁴ And Peter followed him
afar off,

THE DENIALS OF ST. PETER

Luke xxii. 54—62.*John* xviii. 12—27.

¹² Then the band, and the captain and officers of the Jews, took Jesus and bound him: ¹³ and led him away to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high priest that same year*. ¹⁴ Now Caiaphas was he, which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

⁵⁴ Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the high priest's house.

And Peter followed
afar off.

¹⁵ And Simon Peter followed Jesus,

and *so did* another disciple: that disciple was known unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace of the high priest. ¹⁶ But Peter stood at the door without. Then went out the other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

* See *Passion*, pp. 88—93.

Matt. xxvi. 57—75.*Mark* xiv. 53—72.

unto the high priest's palace,
and went in,

even into
the palace of the high priest:

and sat with the servants, to
see the end.

⁶⁹ Now Peter sat without
in the palace:
and a damsel

came unto him,

saying,

Thou also wast with
Jesus of Galilee.

⁷⁰ But he denied before
them all, saying,

I know not
what thou sayest.

and he sat with the servants,

and warmed himself at the
fire*.

⁶⁶ And as Peter was beneath
in the palace, there cometh
one of the maids of the high
priest:

⁶⁷ And when she saw
Peter warming himself,
she looked upon him,
and said,

And thou also wast with
Jesus of Nazareth.

⁶⁸ But he denied,
saying,

I know not, neither
understand I what thou sayest.
And he went out into the
porch; and the cock crew.

* See *Passion*, pp. 99—111.

Luke xxii. 54—62.*John* xviii. 12—27.

⁵⁵ And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the hall,

and were set down together,
Peter sat down among them.

¹⁸ And the servants and officers stood there,

who had made a fire of coals;

for it was cold: and they warmed themselves: and Peter stood with them,

and warmed himself.

⁵⁶ But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the fire, and earnestly looked upon him,
and said,

This man was also with him.

⁵⁷ And he denied him, saying, Woman,
I know him not.

¹⁷ Then saith the damsel that kept the door unto Peter,
Art not thou also *one* of this man's disciples?

He saith,
I am not.

Matt. xxvi. 57—75.

⁷¹ And when he was gone
out into the porch,
another *maid* saw him,
and said unto them that
were there, This *fellow* was
also with Jesus of Nazareth.

Mark xiv. 53—72.

⁶⁹ And a *maid* saw him again,
and began to say to them that
stood by, This is *one*
of them.

⁷² And again he denied

with an oath, I do not know
the man.

⁷³ And after a while came
unto *him* they that stood by,
and said to Peter, Surely,
thou also art *one* of them;
for thy speech
betrayeth thee.

⁷⁰ And he denied it again.

And a little after,
they that stood by,
said again to Peter, Surely,
thou art *one* of them : for thou
art a Galilean, and thy speech
agreeth *thereto*.

⁷⁴ Then began he to curse
and to swear, *saying*, I know
not the man.

And immediately

the cock crew.

⁷¹ But he began to curse
and to swear, *saying*, I know
not this man of whom ye speak.

⁷² And the second time

the cock crew.

⁷⁵ And Peter remembered

And Peter called to mind

Luke xxii. 54—62.*John* xviii. 12—27.

⁵⁸ And after a little while

another saw him,

and said,
Thou art also
of them.

And Peter said, Man, I am
not.

⁵⁹ And about the space of
one hour after, another con-
fidently affirmed, saying,
Of a truth, this *fellow* also was
with him: for he is a Galilean.

⁶⁰ And Peter
said, Man, I know
not what thou sayest.

And immediately
while he yet spake,
the cock crew.

⁶¹ And the Lord turned, and
looked upon Peter.

And Peter remembered

²⁵ And Simon Peter stood
and warmed himself.

They said therefore unto
him, Art not thou also
one of his disciples?
he denied *it*, and said, I am
not.

²⁶ One of the servants of the
high priest, (being *his* kins-
man whose ear Peter cut off,)
saith, Did not I see thee in
the garden with him?

²⁷ Peter then
denied again:

and immediately
the cock crew.

Matt. xxvi. 57—75.

the word of Jesus, which
said unto him, Before the
cock crow, thou shalt
deny me thrice.
And he
went out, and wept bitterly.

Mark xiv. 53—72.

the word that Jesus
said unto him, Before the
cock crow twice, thou shalt
deny me thrice,
And when he thought there-
on, he wept.

SECTION IV

CHRIST IS CONDEMNED BEFORE CAIAPHAS

John xviii. 19—24.

¹⁹ The high priest then
asked Jesus of his disciples,
and of his doctrine. ²⁰ Jesus
answered him, I spake openly
to the world; I ever taught
in the synagogue, and in the
temple, whither the Jews

always resort; and in secret
have I said nothing. ²¹ Why
askest thou me? ask them
which heard me, what I have
said unto them; behold, they
know what I said. ²² And
when he had thus spoken, one

Matt. xxvi. 59—66.

⁵⁹ Now the chief priests,
and elders,
and all the council, sought
false witness against Jesus, to
put him to death;
⁶⁰ But found none:
yea, though many false
witnesses came,
yet found they none.

At the last came two
false witnesses,

⁶¹ And said,

Mark xiv. 55—64.

⁵⁵ And the chief priests

and all the council sought
for witness against Jesus to
put him to death:

and found none.

⁵⁶ For many bare false
witness against him,

but their witness agreed not
together.

⁵⁷ And there arose certain,
and bare false witness against
him, saying,

Luke xxii. 54—62.

the word of the Lord, how he
had said unto him, Before the
cock crow, thou shalt

deny me thrice.

⁶² And Peter
went out, and wept bitterly.

John xviii. 19—24.

of the officers which stood by
struck Jesus with the palm of
his hand, saying, Answerest
thou the high priest so?

²³ Jesus answered him, If I
have spoken evil, bear witness

of the evil: but if well, why
smitest thou me? ²⁴ Now
Annas had sent him bound
unto Caiaphas, the high
priest.

Matt. xxvi. 59—66.

'This fellow said,
I am able to destroy the temple
of God,

and to build it in three days.

⁶² And the high priest arose,

and

said unto him,

Answerest thou nothing?

what is it which these witness

Mark xiv. 55—64.

⁵⁸ We heard him say,

I will destroy this temple
that is made with hands,
and within three days I will
build another made without
hands.

⁵⁹ But neither so did their
witness agree together.

⁶⁰ And the high priest stood
up in the midst,

and asked Jesus,

saying,

Answerest thou nothing?

what is it which these witness

Matt. xxvi. 59—66.

against thee ?

⁶³ But Jesus held his peace.

And the high priest answered
and said unto him,

I adjure thee by the living
God, that thou tell us whether
thou be the Christ, the Son of
God.

⁶⁴ Jesus saith unto him,

Thou hast said :
nevertheless I say unto you,

Hereafter shall ye see the
Son of man sitting on the right

Matt. xxvi. 67, 68.

⁶⁷ Then did they spit in his
face,

and

buffeted him ;
and others smote *him*

with the palms of their hands ;

⁶⁸ Saying,
Prophecy unto us, thou Christ,
Who is he that smote thee ?

Mark xiv. 55—64.

against thee ?

⁶¹ But he held his peace,
and answered nothing.

Again the high priest asked
him, and said unto him,

Art thou
the Christ, the Son of the
Blessed ?

⁶² And Jesus said,
I am :

and ye shall see the
Son of man sitting on the right

Mark xiv. 65.

⁶⁵ And some began to spit
on him,

and to cover his face,
and

to buffet him,

and to say unto him,
Prophecy.

And the servants did strike him
with the palms of their hands.

Matt. xxvi. 59—66.

hand of power,
and coming in the clouds of
heaven.

⁶⁵ Then the high priest rent
his clothes, saying,

He hath spoken blasphemy;
what further need have we of
witnesses?

behold, now ye have heard
his blasphemy.

⁶⁶ What think ye? They
answered and said,

He is guilty of death.

Luke xxii. 63—65.

⁶³ And the men that held
Jesus mocked him, and smote
him.

⁶⁴ And when they had blind-
folded him,

they struck him
on the face,

and asked him, saying,
Prophecy,
who is it that smote thee?

⁶⁵ And many other things
blasphemously spake they
against him.

Mark xiv. 55—64.

hand of power,
and coming in the clouds of
heaven.

⁶³ Then the high priest rent
his clothes, and saith,

What need we any further
witnesses?

⁶⁴ Ye have heard
the blasphemy:

what think ye? And
they all condemned him
to be guilty of death.

Matt. xxvii. 1, 2.

¹ When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel

against Jesus to put him to death.

Mark xv. 1.

¹ And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders*, and scribes, and the whole council,

² And when they had bound him,

they led *him* away,

and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

and bound Jesus,

and carried *him* away,

and delivered *him* to Pilate.

* See Passion, p. 160.

Luke xxii. 66—71; xxiii. 1.

John xviii. 28.

⁶⁶ And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief priests and the scribes came together, and led him into their council, saying, ⁶⁷ Art thou the Christ? tell us. And he said unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe: ⁶⁸ and if I also ask *you*, ye will not answer me, nor let *me* go. ⁶⁹ Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the power of God. ⁷⁰ Then said they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am. ⁷¹ And they said, What need we any further witness? for we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

¹ And the whole multitude of them arose,

and led him

unto Pilate.

²⁸ Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judgment. And it was early.

SECTION V

OUR LORD DELIVERED UP TO PILATE

John xviii. 28—36.

²⁸And they themselves went not into the judgment hall, lest they should be defiled: but that they might eat the passover. ²⁹Pilate then went out unto them, and said, What accusation bring ye against

this man? ³⁰They answered and said unto him, If he were not a malefactor, we would not have delivered him up unto thee. ³¹Then said Pilate unto them, Take ye him, and judge him according to your

Matt. xxvii. 11—14.

¹¹And Jesus stood before the governor :

Mark xv. 2—5.

and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

² And Pilate asked him, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And he answering, said unto him, Thou sayest it.

John xviii. 28—36.

law. The Jews therefore said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: ³²that the saying of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death he should die. ³³Then Pilate entered into the judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the king of the Jews? ³⁴Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others

tell it thee of me? ³⁵Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests have delivered thee unto me. What hast thou done? ³⁶Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence.

Luke xxiii. 2—5.

²And they began to accuse him, saying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Cesar, saying, that he himself is Christ a King.

² And Pilate asked him, saying, Art thou the king of the Jews?

And he answered him, and said, Thou sayest *it*.

John xviii. 37, 38.

³⁷ Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then*?

Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. ³⁸Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews,

* See Passion, p. 196.

Matt. xxvii. 11—14.*Mark* xv. 2—5.

¹² And when he was accused
of the chief priests and elders,

he answered nothing.

¹³ Then said Pilate unto him,

Hearst thou not how many
things they witness against
thee?

¹⁴ And he answered him to
never a word; insomuch that
the governor marvelled
greatly.

³ And the chief priests ac-
cused him

of many things*:

but he answered nothing.

⁴ And Pilate asked him
again, saying, Answerest thou
nothing?

behold, how many
things they witness against
thee.

⁵ But Jesus yet answered
nothing; so that

Pilate marvelled.

SECTION VI

CHRIST SENT TO HEROD

Luke xxiii. 6—12.

⁶ When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. ⁷ And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem at that time.

⁸ And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad:

for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him. ⁹ Then he questioned with him in many words; but he answered him nothing. ¹⁰ And the chief priests and scribes stood and vehemently accused

* See Passion, pp. 199—201.

Luke xxiii. 2—5.

⁴ Then said Pilate to the chief priests and to the people, I find no fault in this man.

⁵ And they were the more fierce, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

John xviii. 37, 38.

and saith unto them,
I find in him no fault at all.

Luke xxiii. 6—12.

him. "And Herod with his men of war set him at nought. and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate,

¹² And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

SECTION VII

*Matt. xxvii. 15—23.**Mark xv. 6—14.*

¹⁵ Now at *that* feast the governor was wont to release unto the people a prisoner, whom they would.

¹⁶ And they had then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas.

⁶ Now at *that* feast he released

unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired.

⁷ And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection. ⁸ And the multitude crying aloud began to

CHRIST REJECTED OF THE PEOPLE

Luke xxiii. 13—23.

John xviii. 39, 40.

¹³ And Pilate, when he had called together the chief priests and the rulers, and the people, ¹⁴ said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man touching those things whereof ye accuse him: ¹⁵ no, nor yet Herod: for I sent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto *him*.

¹⁶ I will therefore chastise him and release *him*.

¹⁷ (For of necessity he must release one unto them at the feast.)

³⁹ But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover:

Matt. xxvii. 15—23.

¹⁷ Therefore when they were gathered together,
Pilate said unto them,

Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ?

¹⁸ For he knew that for envy they had delivered him.

⁹ When he was set down* on the judgment seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that just man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

²⁰ But the chief priests and elders persuaded the multitude

that they should ask Barabbas,

and destroy Jesus.

²¹ The governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? They said,

Mark xv. 6—14.

desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

⁹ But

Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you

the king of the Jews?

¹⁰ For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him

for envy.

¹¹ But the chief priests moved the people,

that he should rather release Barabbas unto them.

¹² And Pilate answered and said again unto them,

* See Passion, p. 252.

Luke xxiii. 13—23.*John* xviii. 39, 40.

Will ye therefore that I
release unto you
the king of the Jews?

¹⁸ And they cried out all
at once, saying, Away with
this *man*,

and release
unto us Barabbas: ¹⁹ (who for a
certain sedition made in the
city, and for murder, was cast
into prison.)

²⁰ Pilate therefore, willing to
release Jesus, spake again to
them.

⁴⁰ Then cried they all
again, saying, Not
this man,

but Barabbas.
Now Barabbas was a robber.

Matt. xxvii. 15—23.

Barabbas. ²² Pilate saith unto them, What shall I do then with Jesus which is called Christ?

They all say unto him, Let him be crucified.

²³ And the governor said, Why, what evil hath he done?

Mark xv. 6—14.

What will ye then * that I shall do unto *him* whom ye call the king of the Jews?

¹³ And they cried out again, Crucify him.

¹⁴ Then Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done?

But they cried out the more, saying,
Let him be crucified.

And they cried out the more exceedingly,
Crucify him.

SECTION VIII

Matt. xxvii. 27—30.

²⁷ Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band of soldiers.

²⁸ And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe,

²⁹ And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon his head, and a

Mark xv. 16—19.

¹⁶ And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium; and they called together the whole band.

¹⁷ And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his head,

* See Passion, p. 215.

Luke xxiii. 13—23.

²¹ But they cried, saying,
Crucify *him*, crucify him.

²² And he said unto
them, the third time, Why,
what evil hath he done? I
have found no cause of death
in him: I will therefore
chastise him, and let *him* go.

²³ And they were instant
with loud voices*, requiring
that he might be crucified.

CHRIST DELIVERED UP TO BE CRUCIFIED

John xix. 1—15.

¹ Then Pilate therefore took
Jesus, and scourged † *him*.

² And the soldiers
platted a crown of thorns, and
put it on his head, and they

* See Passion, p. 216.

† See Passion, pp. 217—223.

Matt. xxvii. 27—30.

reed in his right hand:

and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, king of the Jews!

³⁰ And they spit upon him, and took the reed, and smote him on the head.

Mark xv. 16—19.

¹⁸ And began to salute him,

Hail, king of the Jews!

¹⁹ And they smote him on the head, with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing their knees worshipped him.

John xix. 1—15.
put on him a purple robe,

³ And said,
Hail, king of the Jews!
and they smote
him with their hands.

⁴ Pilate therefore went forth again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him *. ⁵ Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* saith unto them, Behold the man! ⁶ When the chief priests therefore and officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate saith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him. ⁷ The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God.

⁸ When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he was the more afraid; ⁹ and went again into the judgment hall, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. ¹⁰ Then saith Pilate

* See *Passion*, p. 237.

John xix. 1—15.

unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee? ¹¹Jesus answered, Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto

thee hath the greater sin.

¹²And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend: whosoever maketh himself a king speaketh against Cesar.

¹³When Pilate therefore

Matt. xxvii. 24—26. 31.

²⁴When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying, I am innocent of the blood of this just person: see ye *to it*. ²⁵Then answered all the people, and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

Mark xv. 15. 20.

¹⁵And so Pilate, willing to content the people,

²⁶Then released he Barabbas unto them :

released Barabbas unto them,

and when he scourged Jesus, he delivered *him*

and delivered Jesus, when he

John xix. 1—15.

heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment seat in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.¹⁴ And it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour*; and he saith

unto the Jews, Behold your king! ¹⁵ But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your king? The chief priests answered, We have no king but Cesar.

Luke xxiii. 23—25.*John* xix. 16.

²³ And the voices of them and of the chief priests prevailed.

²⁴ And Pilate

gave sentence that it should be as they required.

²⁵ And he released unto them him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired;

but he delivered Jesus to their

¹⁶ Then delivered he him

* See Passion, p. 255.

Matt. xxvii. 24—26. 31.

to be crucified.

³¹ And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him,

and led him away, to crucify him.

Mark xv. 15. 20.

had scourged him, to be crucified.

²⁰ And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple robe from him, and put his own clothes on him,

and led him out to crucify him.

SECTION IX

THE REMORSE OF JUDAS

Matt. xxvii. 3—10.

³ Then Judas *, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, ⁴saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they

said, What *is that* to us? see thou *to that*. ⁵ And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. ⁶ And the chief priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the treasury, be-

SECTION X

Matt. xxvii. 32.³² And as they came out,

they found
a man of Cyrene, Simon by
name :

Mark xv. 21.

²¹ And they compel
one Simon, a Cyrenian, who
passed by, coming out of the

* See Passion, p. 169.

Luke xxiii. 23—25.

will.

John xix. 16.

therefore unto them, to be crucified.

And they took Jesus,
and led *him* away.

Matt. xxvii. 3—10.

cause it is the price of blood.
⁷ And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in.
⁸ Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day. ⁹ (Then was fulfilled that which was spoken

by Jeremy the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued, whom they of the children of Israel did value; ¹⁰ and gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.)

THE WAY OF SORROWS

Luke xxiii. 26—32.

²⁶ And as they led him
away,

they laid hold upon
one Simon, a Cyrenian,
coming out of the

John xix. 17.

¹⁷ And he bearing his cross,

Matt. xxvii. 32.

him they compelled
to bear his cross.

Mark xv. 21.

country, the father of Alex-
ander and Rufus,

to bear his cross.

Luke xxiii. 26—32.

country,

and on him they laid
the cross,
that he might bear *it* after
Jesus.

²⁷ And there followed him
a great company of people,
and of women, which also
bewailed and lamented him.

²⁸ But Jesus turning unto
them said, Daughters of Je-
rusalem, weep not for me,
but weep for yourselves, and
for your children. ²⁹ For, be-
hold, the days are coming,
in the which they shall say,
Blessed *are* the barren, and
the wombs that never bare,
and the paps which never
gave suck. ³⁰ Then shall they
begin to say to the mountains,
Fall on us; and to the hills,
Cover us. ³¹ For if they do
these things in a green tree,
what shall be done in the
dry?

³² And there were also two
other, malefactors, led with
him to be put to death.

SECTION XI

Matt. xxvii. 33—49.

³³ And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is

to say, The place of a skull,

³⁴ They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would not drink.

³⁵ Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

³⁵ And they crucified him, and parted his garments,

casting lots.

Mark xv. 22—36.

²² And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is,

being interpreted, The place of a skull.

²³ And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received *it* not.

²⁷ And with him they crucify two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

²⁸ And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

²⁴ And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments,

casting lots upon them,

THE CRUCIFIXION

Luke xxiii. 33—45.

³³ And when they were come
to the place
which is
called Calvary,

John xix. 17—29.

¹⁷ went forth
into a place called,

the place
of a skull, which is called in
the Hebrew, Golgotha :

there they crucified him,
and the malefactors, one on
the right hand, and the other
on the left.

¹⁸ Where they crucified him,
and two other with him, on
either side one, and Jesus in
the midst.

³⁴ Then said Jesus, Father,
forgive them ; for they know
not what they do.

And they
parted his raiment,

²³ Then the soldiers, when
they had crucified Jesus, took
his garments, and made four
parts, to every soldier a part ;
and also *his* coat : now the
coat was without seam, woven
from the top throughout.

²⁴ They said therefore among
themselves, Let us not rend
it, but cast lots for it, whose
it shall be :

and cast lots

Matt. xxvii. 33—49.

that it might be
fulfilled, which was spoken by
the prophet,

They parted my
garments among them, and
upon my vesture did they
cast lots.

³⁶ And sitting down, they
watched him there;

³⁷ And set up over his head
his accusation written,

THIS IS JESUS
THE KING OF THE JEWS.

Mark xv. 22—36.

what every man should take.

²⁵ And it was the third
hour*, and they crucified
him.

²⁶ And the superscription of
his accusation was written
over,

THE KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁹ And they that passed by,
reviled him, wagging their

²⁹ And they that passed by,
railed on him, wagging their

* See Passion, p. 256

Luke xxiii. 33—45.

John xix. 17—29.

that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith,

They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture did they cast lots.

These things therefore the soldiers did.

¹⁹ And Pilate wrote a title, and put *it* on the cross. And the writing was,

JESUS OF NAZARETH,
THE KING OF THE JEWS.

²⁰ This title then read many of the Jews: for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and Greek, and Latin. ²¹ Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate, Write not, The king of the Jews; but that he said, I am king of the Jews.

²² Pilate answered, What I have written, I have written.

³⁵ And the people stood beholding.

Matt. xxvii. 33—49.

heads,

⁴⁰ And saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days, save thyself. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the cross.

⁴¹ Likewise also the chief priests mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said,

⁴² He saved others; himself he cannot save. If he be the King of Israel, let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe in him.

⁴³ He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he will have him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

Mark xv. 22—36.

heads,

and saying, Ah, thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest *it* in three days,

³⁰ Save thyself, and come down from the cross.

³¹ Likewise also the chief priests mocking, said among themselves with the scribes,

He saved others; himself he cannot save. ³² Let Christ the King of Israel descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe.

⁴⁴ The thieves also, which were crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth.

And they that were crucified with him, reviled him.

Luke xxiii. 33—45,*John* xix. 17—29.

And the rulers
also with them derided *him*,
saying,

He saved others; let him
save himself, if he be Christ
the chosen of God.

³⁶ And the soldiers also
mocked him, coming to him,
and offering him vinegar,
³⁷ and saying, If thou be the
king of the Jews, save thy-
self. ³⁸ And a superscription*
also was written over him in
letters of Greek, and Latin,
and Hebrew, THIS IS THE
KING OF THE JEWS.

³⁹ And one of the malefac-
tors which were hanged railed
on him, saying, If thou be
Christ, save thyself and us.

⁴⁰ But the other answering re-
buked him, saying, Dost not

* See Passion, p. 313.

Matt. xxvii. 33—49.*Mark* xv. 22—36.

⁴⁵ Now from
the sixth hour
there was darkness over
all the land unto the ninth
hour.

⁴⁶ And about the ninth hour
Jesus cried with a loud voice,
saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabach-

³³ And when
the sixth hour was come,
there was darkness over
the whole land until the ninth
hour.

³⁴ And at the ninth hour
Jesus cried with a loud voice,
saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabach-

Luke xxiii. 33—45.

thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? ⁴¹ And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds: but this man hath done nothing amiss. ⁴² And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. ⁴³ And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To-day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

⁴⁴ And it was about the sixth hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

⁴⁵ And the sun was darkened.

John xix. 17—29.

²⁵ Now there stood by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary, the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene. ²⁶ When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold thy son! ²⁷ Then saith he to the disciple, Behold thy mother! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his own *home*.

Matt. xxvii. 33—49.

thani? that is to
say, My God, my God, why
hast thou forsaken me?

⁴⁷ Some of them that
stood there, when they heard
that, said, This *man* calleth
for Elias.

Mark xv. 22—36.

thani? which is, being inter-
preted, My God, my God, why
hast thou forsaken me?

³⁵ And some of them that
stood by, when they heard
it, said, Behold, he calleth
Elias.

⁴⁸ And straightway one of
them ran, and took a sponge,
and filled *it* with vinegar, and
put *it* on a reed, and gave
him to drink.

⁴⁹ The rest said, Let be,
let us see whether Elias will
come to save him.

³⁶ And one
ran and filled a sponge full
of vinegar, and
put *it* on a reed, and gave
him to drink,

saying, Let alone;
let us see whether Elias will
come to take him down.

SECTION XII

Matt. xxvii. 50—56.

Mark xv. 37—41.

⁵⁰ Jesus, when he had cried
again
with a loud voice,

Jesus cried
with a loud voice,

³⁷ And

John xix. 17—29.

²⁸ After this, Jesus knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the scripture might be fulfilled, saith, I thirst.

²⁹ Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar :

and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put *it* upon hyssop, and put it to his mouth.

THE DEATH OF CHRIST

Luke xxiii. 45—49.

⁴⁵ And the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

⁴⁶ And when Jesus had cried

with a loud voice, he said,

John xix. 30—37.

³⁰ When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished :

and

*Matt. xxvii. 50—56.**Mark xv. 37—41.*

yielded up the ghost.

⁵¹ And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;

⁵² And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, ⁵³ and came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many*.

⁵⁴ Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus,

saw the earthquake, and those things that were done,

they feared greatly,

saying,
Truly this was

the Son of God.

and gave up the ghost.

³⁸ And the veil of the temple was rent† in twain from the top to the bottom.

³⁹ And when the centurion, which stood over against him,

saw

that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost,

he said,
Truly this man was

the Son of God.

* See Resurrection, pp. 31—38.

† See Passion, p. 366.

Luke xxiii. 45—49.

Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus,

he gave up the ghost.

John xix. 30—37.

he bowed his head,
and gave up the ghost.

⁴⁷ Now when the centurion

saw

what was done,

he glorified God,
saying,

Certainly this was
a righteous man.

⁴⁸ And all the people that
came together to that sight,
beholding the things which
weredone, smote their breasts,
and returned.

Matt. xxvii. 50—56.

⁵⁵ And many women were there beholding afar off, which followed Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him.

⁵⁶ Among which was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses, and the mother of Zebedee's children.

Mark xv. 37—41.

⁴⁰ There were also women looking on afar off:

among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James the less and of Joses, and Salome;

⁴¹ (Who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him;) and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

Luke xxiii. 45—49.

⁴⁹ And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

John xix. 30—37.

³¹ The Jews therefore, because it was the preparation, that the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath day, (for that sabbath day was an high day,) besought Pilate that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken away. ³² Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. ³³ But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: ³⁴ but one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came thereout blood and water. ³⁵ And he that saw it bare record, and his record is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye might believe. ³⁶ For these things were done, that the scripture should be fulfilled, A bone of him shall not be broken. ³⁷ And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

SECTION XIII

*Matt. xxvii. 57—61.**Mark xv. 42—47.*

- ⁵⁷ When the even was come,
 there came a rich man
 of Arimathea,
 named Joseph,
 who also
 himself was
 Jesus's disciple :
- ⁵⁸ He went
 to Pilate, and
 begged the body of Jesus.
- Then Pilate
 commanded
- ⁴² And now
 when the even was come,
 because it was the preparation,
 that is, the day before the
 sabbath,
- ⁴³ Joseph of
 Arimathea,
 an honourable counsellor,
 which also
 waited
 for the kingdom of God,
- came and went in
 boldly
 unto Pilate, and
 craved the body of Jesus.
- ⁴⁴ And Pilate marvelled if
 he were already dead : and
 calling *unto him* the centurion,
 he asked him whether he had
 been any while dead. ⁴⁵ And
 when he knew *it* of the
 centurion,

THE EVENING OF THE CRUCIFIXION

Luke xxiii. 50—56.*John* xix. 38—42.³⁸ And after this

⁵⁰ And, behold,
there was a man
 named Joseph,

Joseph
 of Arimathea,

a counsellor ;
and he was a good man, and
 a just :

⁵¹ (The same had not con-
 sented to the counsel and
 deed of them;) *he was* of
 Arimathea, a city of the Jews:
 who also himself waited for
 the kingdom of God.

being a
 disciple of Jesus, but secretly
 for fear of the Jews,
 besought

⁵² This *man* went
 unto Pilate, and
 begged the body of Jesus.

Pilate,
 that he might take
 away the body of Jesus :

and Pilate
 gave *him* leave.

<p><i>Matt.</i> xxvii. 57—61.</p> <p>the body</p> <p>to be delivered.</p>	<p><i>Mark</i> xv. 42—47.</p> <p>he gave the body</p> <p>to Joseph.</p>
---	---

<p>Joseph</p> <p style="text-align: right;">59 And when</p> <p style="text-align: right;">had taken</p> <p>the body, he wrapped it in a</p> <p>clean linen cloth,</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">46 And</p> <p>he</p> <p>bought fine linen,</p> <p style="text-align: right;">and took</p> <p>him down, and wrapped him</p> <p>in the linen,</p>
---	---

<p style="text-align: right;">60 And laid</p> <p>it in his own new tomb, which</p> <p>he had hewn out in the rock :</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">and laid</p> <p>him in a sepulchre which was</p> <p>hewn out of a rock,</p>
---	---

and he rolled a great stone

and rolled a stone

Luke xxiii. 50—56.*John* xix. 38—42.

He came therefore, and took the body of Jesus. ³⁹ And there came also Nicodemus, which at the first came to Jesus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight*.

⁵³ And

he

took

it down, and wrapped it in linen,

⁴⁰ Then took they the body of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury. ⁴¹ Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid. ⁴² There laid they Jesus therefore because of the Jews' preparation *day*; for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

and laid

it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

⁵⁴ And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

Matt. xxvii. 57—61.

to the door of the sepulchre,
and departed.

⁶¹And there was Mary Mag-
dalene, and the other Mary,

sitting over against
the sepulchre.

Mark xv. 42—47.

unto the door of thesepulchre.

⁴⁷ And Mary Mag-
dalene and Mary *the mother*
of Joses

beheld
where he was laid.

Luke xxiii. 50—56.

⁵⁵ And the women also,

which came with him from
Galilee, followed after; and

beheld the sepulchre,
and how his body was laid.

⁵⁶ And they returned, and
prepared spices and oint-
ments; and rested the sabbath
day according to the com-
mandment.

PART XV

The Resurrection

SECTION I

THE GREAT SABBATH*

Matt. xxvii. 62—66.

NOW the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate, ⁶³saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again. ⁶⁴Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first. ⁶⁵Pilatesaith unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make *it* as sure as ye can. ⁶⁶So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch.

SECTION II

THE END OF THE SABBATH

Matt. xxviii. 2—4. 1.

Mark xvi. 1—4.

¹And when the sabbath was past†, Mary Magdalene and Mary the *mother* of James,

* See Resurrection, Pt. I. § i.

† See Resurrection, p. 12.

Matt. xxviii. 2—4. 1.

² And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. ³ His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow: ⁴ and for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead *men*.

¹ In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first *day* of the week,

came

Mary Magdalene and the other Mary,
to see the sepulchre.

Mark xvi. 1—4.

and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint him.

² And

very early in the morning, the first *day* of the week,
at the rising of the sun,
they came

unto the sepulchre.

³ And they said among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the sepulchre? ⁴ And when they looked, they saw that the stone was rolled away: for it was very great.

SECTION III

AN ANGEL SPEAKS TO THE WOMEN

Matt. xxviii. 5—8.

⁵ And the angel answered
and said unto the women,
Fear not ye: for I know that
ye seek Jesus,

which was crucified.

⁶ He is not here: for he is
risen, as he said,

Come, see the place where
the Lord lay,

⁷ And go quickly, and tell
his disciples
that he is risen from the dead;
and, behold, he goeth before
you into Galilee; there shall
ye see him:

lo, I have told you.

⁸ And they departed quickly
from the sepulchre

with fear and great joy; and
did run to bring his disciples
word.

Mark xvi. 5—8.

⁵ And entering into the sepulchre,
they saw a young man
sitting on the right side,
clothed in a long white garment;
and they were affrighted.

⁶ And he saith unto them*,
Be not affrighted:
Ye seek Jesus of Nazareth,
which was crucified:

he is risen; he is not here:
behold the place where they
laid him.

⁷ But go your way, tell
his disciples and Peter

that he goeth before
you into Galilee: there shall
ye see him, as he said unto
you.

⁸ And they went out quickly
and fled from the sepulchre;
for they trembled and were
amazed: neither said they any
thing to any *man*; for they
were afraid.

* See Resurrection, p. 71.

SECTION IV

THE GUARD PROCEED TO THE CHIEF PRIESTS

Matt. xxviii. 11—15.

¹¹ Now, when they were going, behold, some of the watch came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the things that were done.

¹² And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large money unto the soldiers, ¹³ saying, Say ye, His disciples came

by night, and stole him *away* while we slept. ¹⁴ And if this come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and secure you. ¹⁵ So they took the money, and did as they were taught: and this saying is commonly reported among the Jews until this day.

SECTION V

MARY MAGDALENE CALLS ST. PETER AND ST. JOHN

Luke xxiv. 12.

² Then arose Peter*, and ran

* See Resurrection, pp. 88—91.

John xx. 1—10.

¹ The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. ² Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him †.

³ Peter therefore went forth,

† See Resurrection, pp. 63, 64.

Luke xxiv. 12.

unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves,

and departed,

wondering in himself at that which was come to pass.

John xx. 1—10.

and that other disciple, and came to the sepulchre. ⁴So they ran both together: and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came first to the sepulchre. ⁵And he stooping down, *and looking in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. ⁶Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie, ⁷and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. ⁸Then went in also that other disciple, which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and believed. ⁹For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. ¹⁰Then the disciples went away again unto their own home.

SECTION VI

OUR LORD APPEARS TO MARY MAGDALENE

John xx. 11—18.

¹¹ But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping: and as she wept, she stooped down, *and looked into the sepulchre,*

John xx. 11—18.

¹²and seeth two angels in white sitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. ¹³And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him. ¹⁴And when she had thus said, she turned herself back and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. ¹⁵Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou have

borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. ¹⁶Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. ¹⁷Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God. ¹⁸Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and that he had spoken these things unto her.

Mark xvi. 9—11.

⁹Now when *Jesus* was risen early the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils. ¹⁰And she went and told them that

had been with him, as they mourned and wept. ¹¹And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.

SECTION VII

OUR LORD SEEN BY THE WOMEN*

Matt. xxviii. 9, 10.

⁹ And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and held him by the feet, and worshipped him.

¹⁰ Then said Jesus unto them, Be not afraid: go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

SECTION VIII

THE WOMEN IN ST. LUKE'S ACCOUNT

Luke xxiv. 1—11.

¹ Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them. ² And they found the stone rolled away from the sepulchre. ³ And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus. ⁴ And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in shining garments: ⁵ and as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? ⁶ He is not here, but is risen: remember how

he spake unto you when he was yet in Galilee, ⁷ saying, The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified, and the third day rise again. ⁸ And they remembered his words, ⁹ and returned from the sepulchre, and told all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. ¹⁰ It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James and other *women that were* with them, which told these things unto the apostles †. ¹¹ And their words seemed to them as idle tales, and they believed them not.

* See Resurrection, pp. 113—122.

† See Resurrection, p. 132.

SECTION IX

THE DISCIPLES GOING TO EMMAUS

Mark xvi. 12.

¹² After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

Luke xxiv. 13—32.

¹³ And, behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about* threescore furlongs. ¹⁴ And they talked together of all these things which had happened. ¹⁵ And it came to pass, that, while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. ¹⁶ But their eyes were holden that they should not know him. ¹⁷ And he said unto them, What manner of communications *are* these that ye have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad? ¹⁸ And the one of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto him, Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not known the things which are come to pass there in these days? ¹⁹ And he said unto them, What things? and they said unto him, Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: ²⁰ and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered

Luke xxiv. 13—32.

him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. ²¹But we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to-day is the third day since these things were done. ²²Yea, and certain women also of our company made us astonished, which were early at the sepulchre; ²³and when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive. ²⁴And certain of them which were with us went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the women had said; but him they saw not. ²⁵Then he said unto them, O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: ²⁶ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory? ²⁷And

beginning at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. ²⁸And they drew nigh unto the village, whither they went: and he made as though he would have gone further. ²⁹But they constrained him, saying, Abide with us, for it is toward evening, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with them. ³⁰And it came to pass as he sat at meat with them, he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake, and gave to them. ³¹And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. ³²And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, and while he opened to us the scriptures?

SECTION X

THEIR RETURN TO JERUSALEM

Mark xvi. 13.

¹³ And they
went

Luke xxiv. 33—35.

³³ And they rose up the same hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them

Mark xvi. 13.

and told it unto the residue :

neither believed they them.

Luke xxiv. 33—35.

that were with them,

³⁴ Saying, the Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. ³⁵ And they told what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

SECTION XI

OUR LORD APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES IN THE ABSENCE OF ST. THOMAS

Luke xxiv. 36—43.

³⁶ And as they thus spake

Jesus himself

stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

³⁷ But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

³⁸ And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled ? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts ?

³⁹ Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself ; handle me, and see ; for a spirit hath

John xx. 19—23.

¹⁹ Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut where the disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus

and

stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

Luke xxiv. 36—43.

not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.

⁴⁰ And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his* hands and his feet.

John xx. 19—23.

²⁰ And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands

and his side. Then were the disciples glad, when they saw the Lord. ²¹ Then said Jesus to them again, Peace *be* unto you: as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you. ²² And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: ²³ whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

⁴¹ And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?

⁴² And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb. ⁴³ And he took *it*, and did eat before them.

SECTION XII

SECOND APPEARANCE TO THE APOSTLES, THOMAS BEING PRESENT

Mark xvi. 14.

John xx. 24—29.

²⁴ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was

Mark xvi. 14.

¹⁴ Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

John xx. 24—29.

not with them when Jesus came. ²⁵ The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into his side, I will not believe.

²⁶ And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them; *then* came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace *be* unto you.

²⁷ Then said he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side; and be not faithless, but believing. ²⁸ And Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. ²⁹ Jesus saith unto him, Thomas, because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed *are* they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.

SECTION XIII

CHRIST APPEARS BY THE LAKE IN GALILEE

Matt. xxviii. 16.*John* xxi. 1—24.

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples
went away into Galilee,—

¹After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he *himself*. ²There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *sons* of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. ³Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. ⁴But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. ⁵Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. ⁶And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. ⁷Therefore

John xxi. 1—24.

that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt *his* fisher's coat *unto him*, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. ⁸ And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. ⁹ As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. ¹⁰ Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. ¹¹ Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.

¹² Jesus saith unto them, Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. ¹³ Jesus then cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise. ¹⁴ This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

¹⁵ So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter,

Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. ¹⁶ He saith to him again the second time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee, He saith unto him, Feed my sheep. ¹⁷ He saith unto him the third time, Simon, *son* of Jonas, Lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep. ¹⁸ Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdest thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry *thee* whither thou wouldest not. ¹⁹ This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. ²⁰ Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus

loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee? ²¹ Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*? ²² Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me. ²³ Then went this saying

abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, He shall not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?

²⁴ This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his testimony is true.

SECTION XIV

OUR LORD APPEARS ON THE MOUNTAIN IN GALILEE

Matt. xxviii. 16—20.

¹⁶ into a mountain where Jesus had appointed them. ¹⁷ And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted. ¹⁸ And Jesus came, and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

¹⁹ Go ye therefore and teach

all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; ²⁰ teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and lo, I am with you always, *even* unto the end of the world. Amen.

Mark xvi. 15—18.

¹⁵ And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. ¹⁶ He that believeth and is baptized, shall be saved; but he that believeth not, shall be damned. ¹⁷ And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name

shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; ¹⁸ they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

SECTION XV

VARIOUS MANIFESTATIONS

1 Cor. xv. 5—7.

⁵ He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve :

⁶ After that he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once : of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.

⁷ After that, he was seen of James, then of all the apostles.

Acts i. 3.

³ To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.

SECTION XVI

CHRIST APPEARS TO THE APOSTLES AT JERUSALEM

Luke xxiv. 44—49.

⁴⁴ And he said unto them, These *are* the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses, and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me. ⁴⁵ Then opened he their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures. ⁴⁶ And said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved

Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day : ⁴⁷ and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. ⁴⁸ And ye are witnesses of these things. ⁴⁹ And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you : but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high.

Acts i. 4—8.

⁴ And, being assembled together with *them*, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which, *saith he*, ye have heard of me. ⁵ For John truly baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence.

⁶ When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, wilt thou

at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel? ⁷ And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. ⁸ But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.

SECTION XVII

Mark xvi. 19, 20.

¹⁹ So then
after the Lord had spoken unto
them,

he was received up into
heaven, and sat on the right
hand of God.

Luke xxiv. 50—53.

⁵⁰ And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

⁵¹ And it came to pass,
while he blessed them,
he was parted from them,

and carried up into
heaven.

*THE ASCENSION**Acts i. 9—12.*

⁹ And when
he had spoken these things,

while they beheld,
he was
taken up; and a cloud re-
ceived him out of their sight.

¹⁰ And while they looked
stedfastly towards heaven as
he went up, behold, two men
stood by them in white appa-
rel; ¹¹ which also said, Ye

Mark xvi. 19, 20.*Luke* xxiv. 50—53.

⁵²And they worshipped him,
and returned to
Jerusalem

with great joy :

⁵³And were continually in
the temple, praising and blessing
God. Amen.

²⁰And they went forth, and
preached every where, the
Lord working with *them*, and
confirming the word with
signs following. Amen.

SECTION XVIII

CONCLUSION OF ST. JOHN'S GOSPEL

John xx. 30, 31.

³⁰And many other signs
truly did Jesus in the presence
of his disciples, which are not
written in this book: ³¹but
these are written, that ye might
believe that Jesus is the Christ,
the Son of God; and that be-
lieving, ye might have life
through his name.

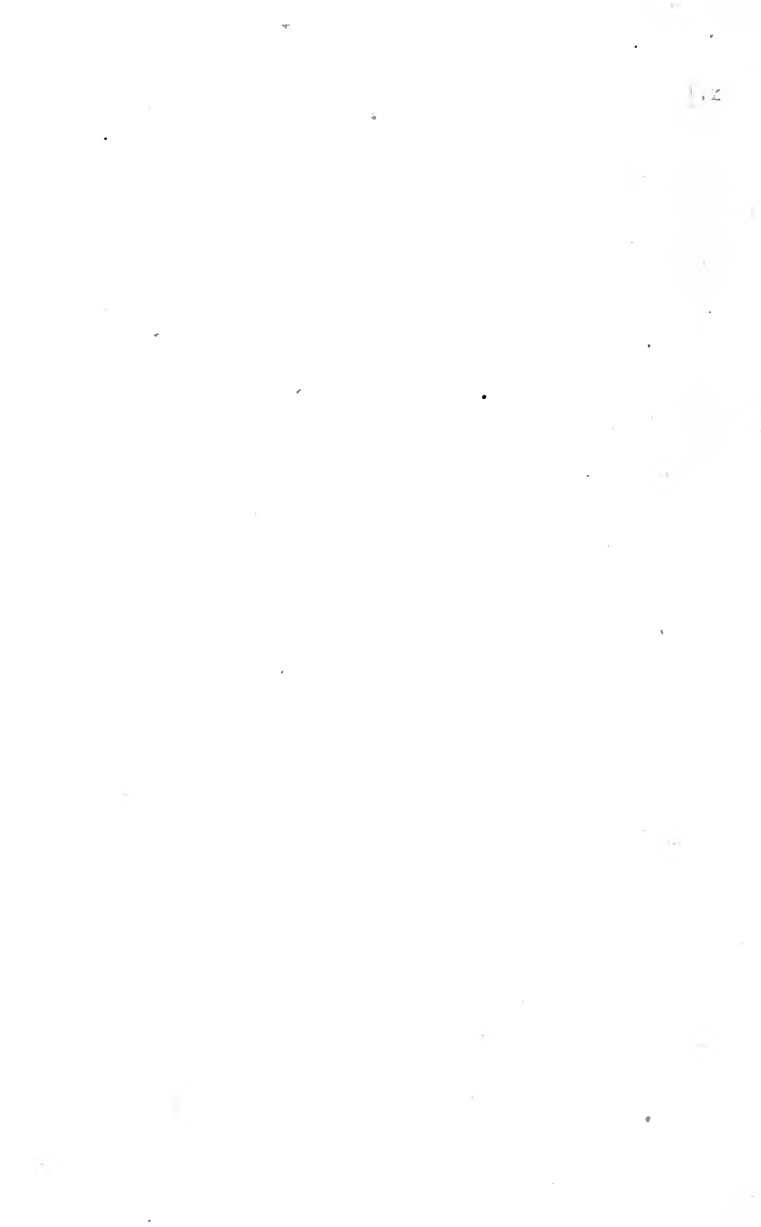
John xxi. 25.

²⁵And there are also many
other things which Jesus did,
the which, if they should be
written every one, I suppose
that even the world itself could
not contain the books that
should be written. Amen.

Acts i. 9—12.

men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.

¹² Then returned they unto Jerusalem from the mount called Olivet, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.



AN INDEX

BY WHICH EVERY CHAPTER AND VERSE SUCCESSIVELY IN THE FOUR GOSPELS MAY BE FOUND IN THE HARMONY, AND FROM THENCE IN THE COMMENTARY.

ST. MATTHEW.					
CHAP.	VER.	PAGE	CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
I.	1—17	9	IX.	9	72
	18—25	6		10—17	152
II.	1—12	11		18—26	156
	13—23	13		27—34	166
III.	1—6	18		35—38	168
	7—10	22	X.	1	168
	11, 12	24		2—4	88
	13—17	24		5—15	168
IV.	1—11	28		16—42	172
	12	38	XI.	1	174
	13—16	46		2—15	95
	17—22	47		16—30	98
	23—25	54	XII.	1—8	78
V.	1	54		9—14	80
	2—16	56		15—21	84
	17—48	56		22—37	102
VI.	1—34	59		38—42	108
VII.	1—29	61		43—45	110
VIII.	1	63		46—50	112
	2—4	64	XIII.	1—9	122
	5—13	92		10—23	128
	14—17	50		24—30	124
	18—22	138		31—35	126
	23—27	140		36	128
	28—34	144		36—43	136
IX.	1	150		44—52	137
	2—8	68		53	138
				54—58	166
			XIV.	1, 2. 6—12	176

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XIV.	3-5	40
	13, 14	180
	15-21	184
	22, 23	188
	24-33	190
	34-36	194
XV.	1	200
	2-9	202
	10-20	203
	21-28	205
	29	207
	29-31	208
	32-38	208
	39	209
XVI.	1-4	210
	5-12	211
	13-20	214
	21-28	216
XVII.	1-13	220
	14-21	226
	22, 23	232
	24-27	234
XVIII.	1-5	236
	6-9	238
	10-35	242
XIX.	1-12	280
	13-15	282
	16-30	284
XX.	1-16	290
	17-19	292
	20-28	294
	29-34	296
XXI.	1-7	310
	8, 9	314
	10, 11, 14-17	318
	12, 13	322
	18, 19	321
	19-22	324
	23-27	326
	28-32	328
	33-41	330
	42-46	334
XXII.	1-14	336
	15-22	338
	23-32	340
	33-40	346
	41-46	348
XXIII.	1-12	350
	13-39	352
XXIV.	1-3	358
	4-8	360
	9-14	362

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XXIV.	15—28	366
	29—31	370
	32—51	372
XXV.	1—13	378
	14—30	379
	31—46	380
XXVI.	1—5. 14—16	382
	6, 7	304
	8—13	306
	17—19	384
	20	388
	24. 21—25	390
	26	398
	27—29	402
	30—35	408
	36—46	412
	47—56	416
	57—75	424
	59—66	430
	67, 68	432
XXVII.	1, 2	434
	3—10	450
	11—14	436
	15—23	440
	24—26. 31	448
	27—30	444
	32	450
	33—49	454
	50—56	462
	57—61	468
	62—66	474
XXVIII.	2—4. 1	475
	5—8	476
	9, 10	480
	11—15	477
	16	486
	16—20	488
ST. MARK.		
I.	1—6	18
	7, 8	24
	9—11	24
	12, 13	28
	14	38
	14—20	47
	21—28	48
	29—34	50
	35—39	52
	40—45	64
II.	1—12	66
	13, 14	72

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
II.	15-22	152
	23-28	78
III.	1-6	80
	7-12	84
	13-19	86
	19-30	102
	31-35	112
IV.	1-9, 26-29	122
	10-25	128
	30-34	126
	35	138
	36-41	140
V.	1-20	144
	21	150
	22-43	156
VI.	1-6	166
	6-11	168
	12, 13	174
	14-16, 21-29	176
	17-20	40
	30-34	180
	35-44	184
	45, 46	188
	47-52	190
	53-56	194
VII.	1	200
	2-13	200
	14-23	203
	24-30	205
	31	207
	32-37	207
VIII.	1-9	208
	9-13	209
	14-21	211
	22-26	212
	27-30	214
	31-38	216
IX.	1	216
	2-13	220
	14-29	226
	30-32	232
	33-37	236
	38-50	238
X.	1-12	280
	13-16	282
	17-31	284
	32-34	292
	35-45	294
	46-52	296
XI.	1-7	310
	8-10	314
	11	318

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XI.	12-14	321
	15-19	322
	20-26	324
	27-33	326
XII.	1-9	330
	10-12	334
	13-17	338
	18-27	340
	28-34	346
	34-37	348
	38, 39	350
	40	352
	41-44	357
XIII.	1-4	358
	5-8	360
	9-13	362
	14-23	366
	24-27	370
	28-37	372
XIV.	1, 2, 10, 11	382
	3	304
	4-9	306
	12-16	384
	17	388
	21, 18-20	390
	22	398
	23-25	402
	26-31	408
	32-42	412
	43-52	416
	53-72	424
	55-64	430
	65	432
XV.	1	434
	2-5	436
	6-14	440
	16-19, 15, 20	444
	21	450
	22-36	454
	37-41	462
	42-47	468
XVI.	1-4	474
	5-8	476
	9-11	479
	12	481
	13	482
	14	484
	15-18	488
	19, 20	490
	ST. LUKE.	
I.	1-4	I

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
I.	5-25	1
	26-38	3
	39-56	4
	57-80	5
II.	1-7	7
	8-20	7
	21	8
	22-39	12
	40-52	14
III.	1-6	19
	7-18	22
	15-17	25
	18	23
	19, 20	41
	21-23	25
	23-38	9
IV.	1-13	29
	14	41
	14-30	45
	31	46
	31-37	48
	38-41	51
	42-44	53
V.	1-11	63
	12-16	65
	17-26	67
	27, 28	73
	29-39	153
VI.	1-5	79
	6-11	81
	12-16	87
	17-26	90
	27-38	90
	39-49	91
VII.	1-10	92
	11-17	95
	18-28	95
	29-35	98
	36-50	99
VIII.	1-3	101
	4-8	123
	9-18	129
	19	113
	20, 21	113
	22	139
	22-25	141
	26-39	145
	40	151
	41-56	157
IX.	1-5	169
	6	175
	7-9	177

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
IX.	10, 11	181
	12-17	185
	18-21	215
	22-27	217
	28-36	221
	37-42	227
	43-45	233
	46-48	237
	49, 50	239
	51-56	276
	57-62	139
X.	1-16	262
	17-24	263
	25-37	264
	38-42	257
XI.	1-13	265
	14, 15, 17-23	103
	16, 29-36	108
	24-26	110
	27, 28	113
	37-54	114
XII.	1-12	116
	13-21	117
	22-40	118
	41-59	121
XIII.	1-9	121
	10-17	266
	18-21	127
	22-35	267
XIV.	1-6	268
	7-14	268
	15-24	269
	25-35	270
XV.	1-10	271
	11-32	272
XVI.	1-13	273
	14-31	274
XVII.	1-10	276
	11-19	277
	20-37	278
XVIII.	1-8	279
	9-14	279
	15-17	283
	18-30	285
	31-34	293
	35-43	297
XIX.	1-10	300
	11-28	302
	29-35	311
	36-40	315
	41-44	316
	45-48	323

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XX.	1-8	327
	9-16	331
	17-19	335
	20-26	339
	27-40	341
	41-44	349
	45, 46	351
	47	353
XXI.	1-4	357
	5-7	359
	8-11	361
	12-19	363
	20-24	367
	25-27	371
	28-36	373
	37, 38	383
XXII.	1-6	383
	7-13	385
	14-18	389
	19	399
	20	403
	21-30	391
	31-38	398
	39	409
	40-46	413
	47-53	417
	54-62	425
	63-65	433
	66-71	435
XXIII.	1	435
	2-5	437
	6-12	438
	13-23	441
	23-25	449
	26-32	451
	33-45	455
	45-49	463
	50-56	469
XXIV.	1-11	480
	12	477
	13-32	481
	33-35	483
	36-43	483
	44-49	489
	50-53	490

ST. JOHN.

I.	1-18	16
	19-34	31
	35-51	32

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
II.	1-12	33
	13-25	35
III.	1-21	36
	22-36	37
IV.	1-3	39
	4-42	42
	43-54	44
V.	1-9	74
	9-16	75
	17-29	75
	30-47	76
VI.	1-5	181
	5-14	185
	15	191
	16-21	191
	22-26	196
	27-40	197
	41-46	198
	47-59	198
	60-71	199
VII.	1	201
	2-10	245
	11-36	246
	37-53	247
VIII.	1	247
	2-11	248
	12-30	249
	31-59	250
IX.	1-41	252
X.	1-21	254
	22-42	256
XI.	1-16	257
	17-44	258
	45-54	260
	55-57	304
XII.	1-3	305
	4-8	307
	9-11	308
	12-16	311
	13, 17-19	315
	20-36	319
	37-50	320
XIII.	1	389
	2-17	390
	18-30	391
	31-38	396
XIV.	1-31	400
XV.	1-27	402
XVI.	1-4	402
	5-33	405
XVII.	1-26	407
XVIII.	1	409

CHAP.	VER.	PAGE	CHAP.	VER.	PAGE
XVIII.	2—11	417	XIX.	30—37	463
	12—18. 25—27.....	425		38—42	469
	19—24	430	XX.	1—10	477
	28—38	436		11—18	478
	39, 40.....	441		19—23	483
XIX.	1—15	445		24—29	484
	16	449		30, 31.....	492
	17	451	XXI.	1—24	486
	17—29	455		25	492

THE END.

